

It is indeed extremely significant that also the lifetime of Muhammad exactly coincides with the very first time the Western Bishop of Rome ever appropriated the title of ‘Sole Pope.’ Shortly after that time, the Eastern-Orthodox Archbishop Andreas of Caesarea (perhaps around 632) seemed to reflect this, in his *Commentary on Revelation*.

At Revelation 13:1-18, Andreas held that the first beast is **Antichrist**, and the second beast is the **False-Prophet**. At Revelation 16:12f (cf. 9:14f), he added that after the (Western) **Beast**, the “kings of the East” would be ‘Gog’ and ‘Magog’ (cf. 20:8) -- from “across the Euphrates.” Here he anticipated the constant later movements of **Islamic Turks** toward the West.³¹⁰

– **ANDREAS**, Church Overseer of Caesarea (A.D. circa 630).

107) Judaism’s *Talmud* had long identified Daniel’s Fourth Empire as “the **Kingdom of Rome** the wicked.” Its mediaeval *Zohar* extended Rome’s little horn specifically to **the Romish Papacy**. “Descriptions of redemption in the *Zohar* follow in the footsteps of the *Midrashim*.... **The Pope**...is called symbolically in the *Zohar* ‘the priest of On.’”³¹¹ Later Jewish expositors denounced not just **Popes** but also **Muhammad(anism)** as predicted enemies of God’s people.³¹²

-- **MEDIAEVAL JUDAISM**: The *Talmud* and the *Zohar* (up to A.D. 650)

108) In Revelation six, John “in the first seal” sees “the beauty of the **Primitive Church**. In the following three, the [unsuccessful] threefold **war** against her” – respectively waged by persecutors, false brethren, and heretics. “In the fifth” seal, John sees “the glory of the **victors** under this war.”³¹³

– **THE VENERABLE BEDE**, English Presbyter of Yarrow (A.D. 730)

109) During the Dark Ages, from the seventh through the eleventh centuries, the Church somewhat stagnated under the **Papacy** in the West and under pressure from a flourishing **Islam** in the East. Pope Gregory II (715-731) was under considerable duress through the advancing Muslims. Yet he – with the help of Charles Martel, who checked the expansion of Islam in the West -- papally filled up the vacuum left by the Byzantine collapse in central Italy. In 727 he even claimed: “All the kings of the West reverence **the Pope** as a **god** on Earth.”³¹⁴

His successor, Pope Gregory III (731-41), gave Martel “the keys of the Confession of St. Peter.” And Gregory III’s successor, Pope Zachary I (741-52), grabbed jurisdiction over the churches of France. The **tyranny** of the Roman Bishop was established. Daniel’s **little horn** now became

stout. Cf. Daniel 7:8,20,24f.

No wonder that the greatest of all 'Eastern-Orthodox' Theologians, John of Damascus, declared in 750 A.D.:³¹⁵ "It should be known that **the Antichrist is bound to come**.... The angel teaches Daniel [11:37], saying these words, 'Neither shall he pay regard to the God of his fathers.' And the Apostle says [in Second Thessalonians 2:3f], 'Let no man deceive you!... The man of sin **shall** be revealed...who exalts himself above all that is called God' **in the temple of God**.... Therefore he is called **Anti-christ**" alias 'in the place of Christ.'

By 754, Pope Stephen II had anointed Pepin Emperor and "Patrician of the Romans." In that same year, Pepin grabbed land from Lombardy -- and gave it to the Pope.

By 800, Pope Leo III crowned Charlemagne Emperor of the whole '**Holy Roman Empire**' (sic). Just think this through! The **Pope** (as the greater) crowned the **Emperor** (as the lesser)!

By 850, the *Pseudo-Isidorean Decretals* and the bogus *Donations of Constantine* were being used falsely to try to legitimize the Vatican's power grabs -- *ex post facto*. Indeed, even the celebrated Roman Catholic Church Historian Professor J. Dollinger declared (before he was excommunicated):³¹⁶ "Without the Pseudo-Isidore, there would have been no Gregory VII" alias Pope Hildebrand.

Yet, during that whole time -- as Daniel's **little horn** became "**more stout**" than any other political leader in the '**Holy Roman Empire**' and extended his stranglehold over all the nominally-Christian World -- he did meet with some real resistance from theologians. Thus, around 840, the cleric Walafrid Strabo identified Paul's predicted apostasy precisely with the spiritual condition of the Roman Church.³¹⁷

Very bravely, he did so with an appeal to Second Thessalonians 2:3 -- where the Apostle Paul predicted a great falling away from the truth. Paul, explained Walafrid during the ninth century, "speaks in a **hidden** way concerning the **destruction of the Roman Empire** -- so that he might not incite them to the persecution of the Church. Or he says this concerning the '**Spiritual Empire**' of the **Roman Church** or the **departure** from the **Faith**.

"'Unless a fugitive comes first.' Thus certain manuscripts have it. No one doubts that he spoke of **Antichrist**, whom he calls a fugitive. Certainly he is a fugitive from God. For if this can be said deservedly of all the wicked -- how much more about him! 'Son of perdition': **Antichrist** not by nature, but by imitation."³¹⁸

– **WALAFRID STRABO**, German Abbot of Reichenau (A.D. 840)

110) Near the beginning of the tenth century, Archbishop Arethas of Caesarea in Cappadocia commented that the Book of Revelation refers to both past and future history. At Revelation 9:12f, he spoke of the "**palace of the Saracens**" as still being in the East -- either in Babylon, or

Baghdad. At Revelation 11:7, he said that the beast from the bottomless pit is **Antichrist**. And at Revelation 13:2 (*cf.* too 9:7-14f & 16:13), he identified the leopard beast with **Islamic or Saracenic Babylon** and the second as the **Roman Antichrist** which would yet overrule such.³¹⁹

– **ARETHAS**, Palestinian Archbishop of Caesarea (A.D. 912)

111) By 985, **Popes** and even **Antipopes** were being **crowned**. They, in turn, endeavoured to ‘uncrown’ one another. And in the tenth century, Arnulf identified the **Papacy** as **Antichrist**.

“What in your eyes, reverend fathers, is that **Pontiff**, seated on a throne, and clad in purple and gold? If he hath not charity, and be puffed up only with his learning -- **he is Antichrist** sitting in the temple of God...in the words of the Apostle [Second Thessalonians 2:3f].... God’s Name is degraded with impunity...and the observance of His holy religion is despised **by the sovereign pontiffs themselves.**”³²⁰

-- **ARNULF**, Romish Bishop of Orleans in France (A.D. 990)

112) By 1054, the *Filioque* Controversy split the Eastern from the Western Church. Indeed, by 1070, Archbishop Theophylact of Achrida -- apparently reflecting on the Pope -- was pointing out that Second Thessalonians 2:3f had predicted that **the Antichrist** would not sit in any Judaistic temple in Jerusalem, but in the **Church Catholic**.³²¹ This means in the Romish Western Church.

By 1073, Gregory VII alias Pope Hildebrand forced the Holy Roman Emperor Henry IV to crawl on his knees through the snow. In 1154, Pope Adrian gave Ireland to England. Indeed, in 1216, Pope Innocent III excommunicated King John of England and all of his subjects -- and proclaimed **transubstantiation** Romanism’s official doctrine.

As Bishop Edward Elliott correctly observes,³²² under the grossly-misnamed Pope Innocent, “it is ‘**God’s Vicegerent**’ on Earth -- **the Pope** -- that received the attendant prelates’ reverence and adoration.... By his **transubstantiating power**, he is the **God-maker**, and thereby in a manner exalted **above God**. It is surely fitting that he should exhibit such his superiority, [even] **seating** himself...upon **God’s high altar** under the dome of St. Peter’s, there to receive the adoration of his cardinals. So, in the most solemn manner, to use St. Paul’s language [in Second Thessalonians 2:4], ‘sitting in the temple of God, and showing himself as god’; to use Daniel’s [11:27f], ‘exalting himself above every god.’ Thus did **the Pope** act out the part of **Antichrist**.”

-- **THE PAPAL ANTICHRISTS**, from Hildebrand to Innocent (A.D. 1085-1216)

113) Nevertheless, the idea of man's task in this World was still kept alive and even expanded by Isidore's *Book of Sentences* and the *Origins or Etymologies*. Later still this idea that the Church Militant would gradually keep on expanding, was developed into the triumphant *Corpus Christianum* idea. This was warmly advocated even at the start of the Church's second millennium by Theologians like Bruno of Segni, Anselm the Archbishop of Canterbury, Peter Lombard (the 'Master of Sentences') – and at a later stage especially by Albert the Great and even more particularly by his yet greater pupil Thomas Aquinas.

Thus, even in Italy, it was then still being stated that “the male child of the woman clothed with the sun in Revelation [chapter twelve] -- represents the seed of the Church. This seed, the children of God or true Christians, will overcome vice and evil spirits, and will teach the nations about God, and rule invincibly.”³²³

-- **BRUNO**, Italian Bishop of Segni (A.D. 1090)

114) “This universal priesthood of all believers, not merely the hierarchy, is the highest kind of priesthood. Because the Body of Christ, which is the Church in which all Members have been arranged in divine order, is the eye and the face of the Church. And further, because the garment of baptism, by which we have been clothed with Christ, is incomparably higher than the stole of the priesthood....

“No Bishop is subject to the Roman Church. He is responsible only to the Universal Church. Moreover, according to the scale of rank and position in the heavenly Kingdom (Luke 22:24), and according to the teachings of Peter himself – the Pope is subjected to every human creature!”³²⁴

– **GERARD OF YORK**, English Archbishop of York (A.D. 1100)

115) The Waldensians' 1120 work *On Antichrist*, said “the fourth iniquity of **the Antichrist** is...his being the Fourth Beast formerly described by Daniel -- and **the Whore of Revelation**. Yet he adorns himself with the Authority, Power, Dignity, Ministry, Offices and the Scriptures -- and makes himself equal with the true and holy **Church**....

“**Antichrist's** works are the **Sacraments**, especially that of the **Eucharist**, which he worships equally with God and Christ.... The Ministers of **Antichrist** or **Papal Rome** or **Babylon** or the **Fourth Beast**, [are] as clouds without water.”³²⁵

Indeed, it certainly seems from their 1180*f* standard work the *Noble Lesson* -- that the Waldensians believed **the Antichrist** was a past as well as a present and also a future entity.³²⁶ For also in the 1280*f* *Vaudois Treatise on Antichrist*, one reads:³²⁷ “The Lord is already destroying the felon by the **Breath of His Mouth**, through many men of good intentions dissipating his possessions and places and dividing the city of **Babylon**.”

Also in their *Treatise of the Papacy and Roman Church being the very Babylon and Harlot of the Apocalypse*, the Waldensians stated:³²⁸ “**Antichrist** is the falsehood (doomed to eternal damnation), covered with the appearance of the truth and righteousness of Christ...being administered by **false apostles**; and...adorning itself **outwardly** with the beauty and piety of **Christ’s Church**.... Such a Congregation is called **Antichrist**, or **Babylon**, or the **Fourth Beast**, or the **Harlot**, or the **Man of Sin**, or the **Son of Perdition**.”

“It is called **Antichrist** because being covered & adorned with the semblance of Christ...it opposes itself to the salvation **wrought** by Christ.... There is no other cause of idolatry than a **false opinion** concerning grace, truth, authority, invocation, and intercession; which this **Antichrist** had taken away from God in order to ascribe them to ceremonies and authorities and a man’s own works, to the saints, and **purgatory**.”

-- **THE WALDENSIANS**, Proto-Reformers of the Church in Europe (A.D. 1120*f*)

116) In the Book of Revelation, the sounding of the first trumpet indicates the preaching of the Gospel to the Jews. And the second seal represents the time of persecution between Nero and Diocletian before the accession of Constantine. The woman clothed with the sun is the Church. And [in Revelation chapter thirteen] the second beast arises not from Heathendom as does the first, but from false brethren who nevertheless continue to believe in one God.³²⁹

-- **RICHARD**, Scottish Abbot of St. Victor (A.D. 1140)

117) The first seal in the Book of Revelation is the Church in her purity, with Christ the conquering One. And the rest of the seals are historical, too.³³⁰

-- **ANSELM**, Archbishop of Canterbury (A.D. 1150)

118) Joachim historicalistically saw the Roman reprobate as the harlot of the Apocalypse. He announced the evangelical **‘Age of the Spirit’ on Rome’s downfall** at the end of Daniel twelve’s 1290 day-years. He also saw Revelation 6’s pale horse as **Muhammad** and the **Saracens**, and

the devil as working also through **Saladin** and **Islam**.³³¹

Too, he stated postmillennially: “**The Church of Rome** is the fleshly Synagogue of Satan. The Church of Rome shall be destroyed.... A **spiritual Church** shall from thenceforth succeed, till the end of the World” -- for the present **Church** was **Babylon**,³³² viz **the Papal Church of Rome!** Yet “there will be a time after the fall of Antichrist.... The Holy Spirit has **already** bound the devil **in part**. And He will bind him more fully in that day...untill the time is fulfilled which is signified by the thousand years.”³³³

-- **JOACHIM**, Italian Abbor of Fiore or Flora or Floris (A.D. 1190)

119) At the Romish Council of Ratisbon, Eberhard declared³³⁴ that **the Popes** -- under a shepherd’s skin -- concealed the **wolf**. Indeed, he stated that Hildebrand alias Pope Gregory VII had laid the foundations of the **Babylonian Empire of Antichrist**.

Eberhard also stated that the old Roman Empire had long ago been taken away from the Earth, according to Second Thessalonians two. Indeed, ten horns had risen in its place as the new Western Empire. From among and over them, “the **Pontifical little horn** had arisen with its intelligent eyes and its blasphemous sayings.” Daniel seven and Revelation thirteen.

-- **EBERHARD**, Archbishop of Salzburg (A.D. 1240)

120) Greathead (Grosseteste) repeatedly made that same identification.³³⁵ Said he:³³⁶ “Since the sin of Lucifer, which same sin will...be that of the son of perdition **Antichrist** whom the Lord will slay with the Breath of His Mouth [alias the Spirit of His Word], there is not and cannot be any other kind of sin so adverse and contrary to the doctrine of the Apostles and of the Gospel -- and at the same time so hateful, detestable, and abominable to our Lord Jesus Christ as to mortify and destroy souls by degrading them of the offices and ministry of their Pastors.... **I refuse to obey [the Pope], and oppose and resist the orders contained in the aforesaid letters.**” Indeed: “Just as skillful builders in laying foundations make careful choice of such stones as were capable of supporting the structure above -- the Masters Regent in Divinity **ought** to take the Old and New Testaments as the **only** sure foundations of their teaching!”³³⁷

-- **ROBERT GREATHEAD**, English Bishop of Lincoln (A.D. 1250)

121) In Revelation, Jezebel represents **Mohammad**.... The woman clothed with the sun, is the

Church of Jesus. And in the **lamblike** beast, we find the **Preachers of Antichrist**.³³⁸

-- **ALBERT THE GREAT**, Universal Doctor and Professor at Cologne (A.D. 1250)

122) The four kingdoms of Daniel two and seven, are Babylonia, Persia, Greece, and Rome. And the Stone is the Kingdom of Christ, which will last through all generations.³³⁹ Matthew 24:14 is to be understood eschatologically, and applies to the Church. The spread of her authority must become **Worldwide**. And **then shall the end come.**³⁴⁰

-- **THOMAS AQUINAS**, Angelic Doctor and Professor from Naples (A.D. 1270)

123) “The times of Antichrist are at hand in these days of ours. Therefore wickedness must needs be uprooted.... The elect of God must appear..., so that the World may be renewed and the fullness of the Gentiles may enter in and the remnants of Israel be converted to faith.”³⁴¹

-- **ROGER BACON**, English Physician of Oxford (A.D. 1272)

124) **Antichrist**, held Pierre d’Olivi, rules the Romish Church, the ‘**Babylon**’ of Revelation chapter seventeen.³⁴² “The Church of Rome was the Whore of Babylon, the Mother of harlots -- the same that St. John beheld sitting upon a scarlet-coloured Beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns,” and the chief and proper **Antichrist**.³⁴³ “The state of the Church from the condemnation of Babylon, that is, the carnal Church, up to the end of the World -- ought to have so much space of time that the whole World and all Israel may be converted to Christ [cf. Romans 11:12-32].... For far be it that the third principal state of the World, bearing appropriately the image of the Holy Spirit, should be momentary or so ridiculously and disproportionately abbreviated!”³⁴⁴

-- **PIERRE D’OLIVI**, French Leader of the “Spirituals” (A.D. 1290)

125) It was stated by the 1294-1303 Pope Boniface VIII³⁴⁵ that “it was **essential to the salvation** of every human being to be **subject to the Roman Pontiff**.” What bare-faced effrontery! So, in 1304, Ubertino identified the Popes as the Beasts of the inspired Book of Revelation.³⁴⁶

Revelation 20:1-6 “is referred to three times. First, the death and resurrection of Christ, when Christ bound his [Satan’s] power...so that he might not be able to hinder the conversion of the

nations to the Lord (as he had done formerly from the beginning of idolatry till [the advent] of Christ). Second, it is clear that it refers to the time of the expulsion of idolatry from the World under the time of Constantine. For from then, he [Satan] was not able to seduce the nations to worshipping demons and idols as he had done before. Third, it is referred to the time of the death of Antichrist in the seventh state -- in which he shall be bound, so that he might not be able to seduce the World and to tempt the Church as he had done in the other six states of the Church.”³⁴⁷

– **UBERTINO**, Italian Lecturer of Casale in Tuscany (A.D. 1330)

126) Around 1310, Arnold of Villanova had dated Daniel twelve’s 1290 day-years as terminating during that fourteenth century.³⁴⁸ That indeed came to pass in 1360 -- exactly 1290 day-years after the 70 A.D. Roman destruction of the Hebrew temple in the same generation as the death of Jesus Whom it had prefigured. For in 1360, God raised up John Wycliffe to assert³⁴⁹ that “**the Pope is Antichrist** here on Earth.”

After quoting Daniel 7:8-25 on the **little horn** that would become very **stout**, Wycliffe said:³⁵⁰ “By a ‘time’ -- Daniel understands the whole period in which the Church apostasizes -- from the time of its first endowment, even to the time in which **Mahomet** prevailed. And by [two] ‘times’ -- he understands the diversity of times from this time [of Muhammad] up to the time when the secular rulers compute harmoniously their gifts which they bestow upon the poor. And by ‘half a time’ -- he understands the residue of time during which the [Papal] clergy by the deceit of their excommunication and the thunderbolt of their censures against those who do good to them, foolishly kick back by taking away the remedy of their sin....

“Why is it necessary, in unbelief, to look for another Antichrist? Hence, in the seventh chapter of Daniel, **Antichrist** is forcefully described by a [blaspheming] horn arising in the time of the fourth [or **Roman**] kingdom. For it grew from [among] our powerful ones -- more horrible, more cruel, and more greedy.... The ten horns are the whole of our temporal rulers. And the [blaspheming] horn has **arisen** from the ten horns, having eyes and a mouth speaking great things against the Lofty One and wearing out the saints of the Most High and thinking that he is able to change times and laws.... For so our clergy foresee the **Lord Pope**, as it is said of the eighth **blaspheming little head**.” Indeed, “the abomination of desolation” [cf. Daniel 12:11] set up in the holy place, is the doctrine of **transubstantiation** -- “this **heresy** about the host” alias the bread.³⁵¹

-- **JOHN WYCLIFFE**, English Pre-Reformer and Professor at Oxford (A.D. 1380)

127) “The Antichrist has already come! He is neither Jew, Pagan, Saracen, nor worldly tyrant, but the ‘man who opposes Christian truth’ and the the Christian life by way of ‘deception.’

He is, and will be, the most wicked 'Christian' -- **falsely** styling himself by **that name**; assuming the highest station in the **Church**...; arrogating dominion over all ecclesiastics and laymen; one who, by the working of Satan, assumes to himself power and wealth and honour; and makes the Church, with its goods and Sacraments, subservient to his own carnal ends."³⁵²

"As John the Baptizer pointed away to Christ, so 'the signs [of the times]' point away impressively with their fingers to Antichrist **already** coming. They point to him **now**, and will point to him **still more**. They have revealed him -- and will keep on revealing him till the Lord shall **destroy** him with the Breath [or Spirit] of His Mouth [alias His Word]. And He will consume him by the brightness of His new manifestation -- until Satan finally is **crushed** under His feet.

"The **friends** of Christ, however, **will destroy** him [the Antichrist]; will rob him of his trade -- the company of the Preachers of Jesus Christ, united and bound together by the love and wisdom which come from God. All Holy Scripture predicts that **before** the end of the World the **Church** of Christ shall be **reformed**, renovated, and more **widely extended**; that she shall be **restored** to her pristine **dignity** ; and that still in her old age, her **fruitfulness** shall **increase**."³⁵³

-- MATTHIAS OF JANOW, Bohemian Canon of Prague (A.D. 1385)

128) The Cumbrian or Yorkshireman John Wycliffe's follower, the Welshman Walter Brute -- was a graduate of Oxford University. He was more specific than even Wycliffe had been. For in his 1391 accusation by the Romish Bishop John of Hereford, it was charged:³⁵⁴ "The said Walter has oftentimes said and commonly avouched that **the Pope is Antichrist**, a seducer of the people, and utterly against the Law and life of Christ."

Indeed, Walter Brute responded:³⁵⁵ "**Antichrist** be already come.... That **Antichrist**...is the high **Bishop of Rome**, calling himself the Servant of God and the chief Vicar of Christ in this World.... The **Pope's law** is contrary to **Christ's Law**.... Who else may so well be **Antichrist** and [also] a seducer of the people? For there is no greater pestilence, than a 'friendly' enemy!"³⁵⁶

-- WALTER BRUTE, British Lollard Leader in Wales (A.D. 1390)

129) It is very important to note who wrote the preface to a later edition of the Wycliffite John Purvey's 1390 *Commentary on Revelation*. It was nobody other than Martin Luther. There, Luther wrote:³⁵⁷ "This preface...was written by us for this reason -- so that we might make known to the World that we are not the first who interpret the Papacy as the kingdom of Antichrist. For many years prior to us, so many and so great men (whose number is large and their memory eternal) have attempted this clearly and openly...."

“This author [viz. John Purvey] was...hindered by the defectiveness of the time and the reign of darkness. He could neither speak these things so purely nor think so clearly as in this our age we [may] speak and think. Yet, he rightly and truly pronounces **the Pope Antichrist** (as he is).” And postmillennially, **after** predicting the destruction of Antichrist, Purvey stated that there would be a **period of peace** and quiet for **the Church**.

-- **JOHN PURVEY**, Wycliffite Leader at Lutterworth (A.D. 1390f)

130) Wycliffite views from Britain reached Bohemia. There (at the end of Daniel twelve’s 1335 day-years in A.D. 1405), Huss maintained that **the great Antichrist** was the **Pope of Rome**.

“The great Antichrist...[which] according to the Word of God was to come..., was **even now** in possession of the highest dignity of Christendom.... Christians are not to obey him but, as the chief enemy and grand opponent of Christ, they are rather to resist him.”³⁵⁸

“I beseech you in Christ Jesus...to be prepared for a battle! For the reconnoitres of Antichrist have already begun, and the fight will soon follow. The ‘Goose’ [Huss in Czech means ‘goose’] also must needs flap his wings against the wings of Behemoth and against his tail which always conceals the abomination of the beast **Antichrist**.... The Lord shall destroy the head and the tail -- that is, **the Pope and his prophets**...who under the false pretext of sanctity conceal the abominable Beast.”³⁵⁹

“Blessed is he that considers ‘the abomination of desolation’ which was spoken of by Daniel [12:11 cf. 9:26f & 11:31].... Verily, ‘a great abomination’ is pride, avarice, and simony.... This is what we clearly mark in those who win office and dignity. Would that I were allowed to point out their wickedness, in order that the faithful servants of God might beware of them! Gladly would I do so. But I am trusting that God will raise up others after me [such as Luther ‘the Swan’], braver men than there are today, who shall better reveal the wickedness of Antichrist.”³⁶⁰

“The iniquity of the great harlot -- that is, of the blaspheming **Congregation**, of which we read in the Apocalypse -- is and shall be made bare, with which harlot the kings of the Earth **commit fornication**.... They commit fornication spiritually.... They depart from Christ and His truth, and consent to the falsehood of Antichrist.”³⁶¹

-- **JAN HUSS**, Bohemian Pre-Reformer and Professor in Prague (A.D. 1412f)

131) “All time is unrolled in periods of seven -- as seven days, seven years, seven times seven years.... Hence, the fiftieth year is after a wearisome revolution of time [of seven times seven years] -- a sabbath-keeping in which all slavery ceases and returns to **liberty**....

“The number of the faithful will be increased steadily, and will be enlarged successively by the light of the doctrine, until the fiftieth jubilee. And there will be made in the very signs and prodigies, explanations of the life of Christ handed down in the Gospels. And there will not be a dwelling in the World -- without the knowledge of Christ....

“The Church will rise again. And the infidel Antichrists, seeing that the Church has prevailed and that they are conquered, will submit to Christ as the Victor. And all nations will return to Him.... And the glorious Church turns by a glorious ‘resurrection’ from the oppression of Antichrist.... All who have been in doubt concerning the truth of the life which is in Christ the Bridegroom of the Church, become witnesses of the glorious resurrection!”³⁶²

-- NICHOLAS DE CUSA, German Archdeacon of Liege (A.D. 1450)

132) “Convert the Turks [alias the Muslims]! And how shall they be converted -- unless the Church be renewed? St. Matthew has told us that the Gospel shall be preached throughout the World.”³⁶³ “Rome shall not [be able to] quench this fire. And if this were quenched -- God would kindle another. And it is already kindled everywhere -- only they do not know it!”³⁶⁴

“In the pompous house of night, they murmured their prayers and rattled off their ‘sermons.’ But the stream of life did not gush forth. It had turned to ice in this frosty atmosphere.

“Then, out of this cloud of incense, someone stepped forth and declared: ‘I am the Vicar of God on Earth!’ And the nations worshipped him. He could not err -- even if he did not speak the truth! He alone could save souls -- even if he brought misery!

“But the people who dwelt in darkness and the shadow of death, would see the great Light again -- the Light Which brightens the day. And the faithful watchmen on the walls of Zion proclaimed: ‘The night is far spent, and the day is approaching. Let us cast off the works of darkness and put on the armour of light!’

“Truth stands firm. And like the Earth turns around the sun, so men turn toward truth. Jesus has given to truth a brightness like the brightness of the morning. He roused new life in the hearts of men. And never will He cease again!”³⁶⁵

-- GIROLAMO SAVANAROLA, Italian Professor of Florence (A.D. 1490)

133) “There must be other inhabited lands, since God’s command at the Flood was to fill the Earth [Genesis 9:7].”³⁶⁶ “O Lord, Eternal and Almighty God, by the sacred Word You have created the Heavens and the Earth and the Sea! May Your name be blessed and glorified!

And praised be Your Majesty -- You Who designed to use Your humble servant to make Your sacred name **known** and proclaimed in this **other** part of the **World!**³⁶⁷

“All this makes for the **security** of the **Christians** and the **assurance** of their **dominion**, and gives great hope for the honour and **increase** of the Christian **religion!**³⁶⁸ “In the Name of the Most Holy Trinity, Who inspired me with the idea, and afterward made it perfectly clear to me, that I could navigate and go to the Indies from Spain -- by traversing the ocean westwardly!”³⁶⁹

“Let Christ rejoice on **Earth** as He rejoices in Heaven, as He foresees that so **many** souls of so **many** **people** heretofore lost are to be **saved!**... I said above that much remained for the completion of the prophecies. And I say that there are great things in the World, and I say that the sign is that our Lord is hastening them. The preaching of this Gospel in so **many** lands, in recent times, tells it to me!³⁷⁰

-- **CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS**, Italian Explorer of the Americas (A.D. 1500)

134) Luther but continued the tradition of the Wycliffites (both in Britain and later in Bohemia). They, in turn, had rediscovered and were perpetuating the teachings of the Holy Scriptures as understood by the Ancient Hebrews and the Early Church before the origin of the Papacy from A.D. 600 onward. See our essays *Luther on Islam and the Papacy* and *Calvin on the Papacy*.³⁷¹

Both Luther and Calvin believed **the papal Antichrist** as well as **Muhammad's Islam** will **yet** be demolished **before** the final return of Christ -- precisely by the **powerful Protestant preaching of the Holy Bible** as the **Spirit of God's Mouth** (Second Thessalonians 2:8). In addition, especially Calvin and Calvinism believed that such would then be followed by a golden reign of **international peace** under **God's Law** and **His Gospel** upon a **then-Christianized Earth**.

Proclaimed Dr. Martin Luther in 1521: “**The abominations of the Pope**, with his whole kingdom, must **be destroyed**. And the Lord does this without hand, by **the Word** alone. The subject exceeds all human comprehension.... I cherish **the best hopes!**”

Again, in 1523, Luther added: “The kingdom of Antichrist, according to the Prophet Daniel [8:25], must ‘be broken without hand.’ That is -- the Scriptures will be understood...and every one will **preach** and speak **against papal tyranny** from the Word of God, until this ‘man of sin’ is **deserted** by all his adherents and he **dies** of himself....

“Let those who sincerely **preach** the Gospel, be protected! ... This is **the way in which Christ will destroy Antichrist** -- by the **Breath of His Mouth**” alias by the **Spirit of His Word** (cf. Second Thessalonians 2:3-8).

“In the beginning, the Church was **victorious** over...the Jews and the might of the Romans. In like manner, she will today and forever be **victorious...over** the Pope and the power of the **Turk**

[alias **Islam**].... **The Pope** is the last blaze, in the lamp which **will go out** and **ere long be extinguished**.... But when he is struck with God's Word [*cf.* Second Thessalonians 2:3-8], then the Pope is turned into a poppy and a frothy flower.... The Spirit of God's Mouth hath seized on him.... He shall increase no more, but rather **decrease!**"³⁷²

"The body of the **Antichrist** is as well the **Pope** as the **Turk** [alias **Islam**].... A living being consists of body and soul. The spirit of the Antichrist is the Pope; his flesh, is the Turk. The latter fights against the Church with material weapons; whereas the former, with spiritual. But **both** are from the same master, **the devil**. Because **the Pope** is a **liar**, and the **Turk** is a **murderer**. Make a **unit of the Antichrist** -- and you will find both in the Pope.

"But as in the beginning the **Church** was **victorious** over the sanctimoniousness of the Jews and the might of the Romans -- in like manner, **she shall today and forever be victorious** over the hypocrites; that is, **over the Pope and the power of the Turk** [alias **Islam**] and the **Emperor** [of the so-called '**Holy Roman Empire**']. Just let us **pray** for it!"³⁷³

-- **MARTIN LUTHER**, German Father of the Protestant Reformation (A.D. 1525)

135) The Word of God is the "true source of faith, life, **God's Commandments**."³⁷⁴ "The **Law of nature**...is none other than the **Spirit of God**." This Law is summed up in **the Golden Rule** (Matthew 7:12) and in **Jesus's summary of the Law** (Matthew 22:37-39). It is "the very **leadership** of the Holy Spirit and His conduct of **our** lives" [*cf.* Romans 2:14]. Christ has "**made the Law sweet**."³⁷⁵ "Where the Word of God is most clearly preached, there **the Law** is most faithfully **observed**."³⁷⁶

God created men in His Own image -- so that they might live together in peace and harmony -- like the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit.³⁷⁷ "**Just as God created man** through His Son, **so He resolved to save man** through His Son....

"**Man is the most admirable** of all creatures of the World.... Indeed, **he surpasses the beauty of the angels**.... Among all the creatures of Earth, men are the **only** ones which have the intellectual capacity for **dominating** and **directing** creation.... God created man to be the prefiguration of the whole relationship between God and the World which would come into being through Christ.... He sits at the right hand of God.... It is **there** that He finds Himself; that He lives; that **He rejoices and cheers the brethren**."³⁷⁸

"**If we would live Christlikely -- everybody would fall away from Popedom!** Because each would recognize that nothing else than deceitful pomp stands behind it.... **Everything undertaken** [against the Papacy] toward its fall, **shall succeed!** Yet **I request that we break the might of the Papacy not** by the power of hate **but** by the power of **love** toward God and to our neighbour....

"The Papacy has to be abolished -- or it keeps on concealing itself until it again suppresses the Gospel. But by no other means can it be routed more thoroughly, than **by the Word of God**

(Second Thessalonians two [verses 3-8]). Because as soon as the World receives this [Word of God] in the right way -- it shall turn away from the Pope without compulsion!"³⁷⁹

"It is only through Christ that all things shall be given to us.... All Christians are brothers of Christ, and are among one another.... Everything which God has permitted or not forbidden, is right.... Many have been elected, who not yet have faith.... Come, Creator, Holy Spirit, and enlighten the hearts of Your Own!...

"Governments are [to be] servants of that which is good and righteousness.... God has raised up our Christ unto Heaven.... This promises that we too [shall also be].... Works are [to be] done, according to God's Law.... Everlasting life comes only through the grace and the love of God, which He, through Christ, pours out richly -- over us!"³⁸⁰

– ULRICH ZWINGLI, Pioneer Swiss Reformer (A.D. 1530)

136) "There shall be an age when humanity shall be united as one flock under one Shepherd [viz. Jesus Christ]. That age of true faith, love, knowledge and holiness shall dawn through the preaching of the evangelical faith of the Reformation. Justice, peace, humanity wisdom and the spread of science will characterize that era."³⁸¹

– THEODORE BIBLIANDER, Zwingli's Swiss Successor in Zurich (A.D. 1535)

137) "He [God] decreed to honour man – namely, that he [God's image man] should have authority over all living creatures. He appointed man...lord of the World.... This authority was not given to Adam only, but to all his posterity as well as to him.... Men were created to employ themselves in some work.... Let him who possesses a field so partake of its yearly fruits that he may not permit the ground to be injured by his negligence!... Let him endeavour to hand it down to posterity...even better cultivated!...

"Let everyone regard himself as the steward of God in all things which he possesses!... Man was the governor of the World.... God, from the beginning, imposes a Law upon man, for the purpose of maintaining the right.... Our life will then be ordered rightly, if we obey God and if His will be the regulator of all our affections."³⁸²

"The Father will deny nothing to His Son which relates to the extension of His Kingdom to the uttermost ends of the Earth. But in this wonderful matter, Christ is introduced as presenting Himself before the Father with prayers – in order to illustrate the free generosity of God in conferring upon men the honour of constituting His Own Son Governor over the whole World.... Unless, therefore, we suppose the prophecy concerning the vast extent of Kingdom to have been uttered in vain and falsely – we must apply it to Christ Who alone has subdued the whole World to Himself and embraced all lands and nations under His dominion....

“Christ is immediately armed with power to destroy, in the day of His wrath, kings and their armies who are hostile to Him.... They shall at length be compelled to feel that He Whom they refuse to honour as their King, is their Judge. In short, they are being broken into pieces by various methods – till they become His footstool [Psalm 110:1]. In what respect the doctrine of the Gospel is an iron rod [Psalm 2:9 cf. Revelation 2:27], may be gathered from Paul’s [Second] Epistles to the Corinthians [10:4] -- where he teaches that the Ministers of Christ are furnished with spiritual weapons to cast down every high thing which keeps on exalting itself against Christ.”³⁸³

“The Gentiles, awakened by the signal miracles wrought by God, would again come to embrace the true religion from which they had fallen away.... Moreover. As God had not subdued the World to Himself prior to the time when those who before were unconquerable, were subdued to a willing obedience by the preaching of the Gospel – we may conclude that this conversion was [to be] effected only under the management and government of Christ.”³⁸⁴

“The Kingdom of God is continually growing and advancing -- to the end of the World. We must pray every day that it may come! For to whatever extent iniquity abounds in the World – to such an extent the Kingdom of God, which brings along with it perfect righteousness, has not yet come.”³⁸⁵

Psalm 47 “chiefly magnifies the favour which, according to the state of things at that time, God has graciously vouchsafed to the offspring of Abraham.... Salvation to the whole World was to proceed from this source. However, at the same time, it contains a prophecy of the future Kingdom of Christ.

“It teaches that the glory which then shone under the figure of the material sanctuary, will diffuse its splendour far and wide when God Himself will cause the beams of His grace to shine into distant lands – so that kings and nations may be united into fellowship with the children of Abraham.... The Kingdom of God would be much more magnificent and glorious at the coming of the Messiah, than it was under the shadowy dispensation of the Law – inasmuch as it would be extended to the uttermost boundaries of the Earth...so as to occupy the whole World from one end to the other.”³⁸⁶

“May we daily solicit You in our prayers! And may we never doubt but that under the government of Your Christ, You can again gather together the whole World, though it be miserably dispersed – so that we may persevere in this warfare to the end! Until we shall at length know that we have not in vain put hope in You – and that our prayers have not been in vain, when Christ shall exercise the power give to Him for our salvation and for that of the whole World.”³⁸⁷

“The Psalm [67] contains a prediction of Christ’s Kingdom, under which the whole World was to be adopted into a privileged relationship with God.... The passage might be understood as encouraging the minds of the Lord’s people to trust in the continuance and increase of the divine favour.... Here we have a clear prophecy of that extension of the grace of God by which the Gentiles were [to be] united into one body with the posterity of Abraham.... The Psalmist

argues, that should God generously supply the wants of His people – the consequence would be to **increase** the fear of His Name, since **all the ends** of the **Earth** would...**submit** themselves with greater **cheerfulness** to His government.”³⁸⁸

According to Psalm 72, “the Kingdom of Christ...was to be **extended** from the rising of the sun to its going down” -- viz. from East to in the West. “The meaning then is that the King chosen by God in Judea will obtain so complete a **victory** over all His enemies, **far and wide**, that they shall come humbly to **pay Him homage**.... This verse [11] contains a more distinct statement of the truth that **the whole World** will be brought into **subjection** to the authority of Christ....

“**The nations will become convinced** that nothing is more desirable than to receive from Him **Laws and Ordinances**.... David...breaks forth in praising God – because he was assured by the Divine Oracles that his prayers would not be in vain.... David therefore with good reason prays that the **glory** of the Divine Name may **fill the whole Earth** – since that Kingdom was to be **extended** even to the **uttermost** boundaries of the **Globe**.”³⁸⁹

“In this Psalm [110], David sets forth the **perpetuity** of Christ’s reign, and the eternity of His priesthood.... In the first place, he affirms that God conferred upon [the man] Christ **supreme dominion**, combined with **invincible** power, with which He either **conquers all His enemies** or **compels them to submit** to Him. In the second place, he adds that God would **extend** the boundaries of this Kingdom **far and wide**.... Christ should not reign as King upon Mount Zion only, because God would cause His power to extend to the **remotest regions** of the **Earth**.”³⁹⁰

“While the fullness of days began at the coming of Christ, it flows on in uninterrupted **progress** (Isaiah 2:2-4), until He appears the second time for our salvation.... The Prophet here shows that the boundaries of His Kingdom will be **enlarged** – so that He may **rule** over various **nations**.... Christ is not sent to the Jews only, so that He may reign [merely] over them – but so that He may **hold sway** over the **whole World**.”³⁹¹

“God not only protects and defends [the Kingdom of Christ], but also **extends** its boundaries **far and wide**, and then preserves and **carries it forward** in uninterrupted **progression** unto eternity.... We must not judge of its stability from the present appearances of things, but from the **promises** which **assures** us of its **continuance** and of its constant **increase**.”³⁹²

““Make known His works among the peoples!’ (Isaiah 12:4-5). He means that the work of this deliverance will be so excellent, that it ought to be proclaimed not only in one corner but throughout the whole World. He wished indeed that it should be made known first to the Jews; but that it should afterwards spread abroad to **all men**....

As the Jews proclaimed among the Medes and Persians and other neighbouring nations, the favour which had been shown to them – so, when Christ was manifested, they ought to have been heralds to sound aloud the Name of God **throughout every country in the World**. Hence it is evident what is the desire which ought to be cherished among all the godly. It is that the goodness of God may be made known to **all**, so that all may join in the same **worship** of God.... He shows that it is our **duty** to **proclaim** the goodness of God to **every nation**. While we exhort and **encourage others**, we must **not** at the same time sit down in indolence. But it is

proper that we set an **example** before others.”³⁹³

“The labour of Christ and of the whole Church will be glorious – not only before God, but likewise before **men**.... Hence it follows, that we **ought to have good hopes of success.**”³⁹⁴

‘So shall He sprinkle **many** nations.’ Isaiah 52:15 (*cf.* Matthew 28:19). “Let us **all** come with a true humility to embrace this Redeemer Who is offered to us! And let us be so mortified within ourselves, that we may be raised up in the majesty given to Him – to be partakers in the life He has won for us, and that He may **grant this grace** not only to us but to **all peoples and nations of the Earth!**”³⁹⁵

“‘The Gentiles **shall** come to Your light, and kings to the brightness of Your rising’ (Isaiah 60:3).... Now He confers on the Church the very highest honour, that she shines with such brightness as to **attract to herself nations and princes.**”³⁹⁶

“‘Lift up your eyes round about!’ (Isaiah 60:4).... It means that there shall be a **wonderful revolution in the World** – so that they who formerly were strangers and dispersed, shall be united in one body. Finally, it denotes the **extension** of the Church to the **farthest** boundaries of the **Earth.**”³⁹⁷

“‘Your sons shall come from far, and your daughters shall be nursed at your side’ (Isaiah 60:4). I consider the plain meaning to be that both sons and daughters shall **run** together to the Church. That is, that the Church shall have sons and daughters not only at home but abroad, and in the **most distant part of the World**.... The womb of the Church shall not be limited to any corner of the World, but shall be **extended as far and wide** as there shall be **space** throughout the **whole World!**”³⁹⁸

“‘Surely the islands shall wait for Me!’ (Isaiah 60:9). Do not wonder, therefore, that so **many shall flow into the Church!** For ‘the islands’ which at present sometimes despise and sometimes fight against Me, shall become so attentive to Me as to execute whatever I shall command.... Besides, the Prophet declares that the **riches of the Gentiles**, which he appeared to represent a little before[hand] as the **prey of the Church** or the **pride of victory**, shall be a **sacred offering to God.** And thus he states more clearly what I have said – that there is **nothing which we ought to desire more earnestly than that the whole World should bow to the authority of God.**”³⁹⁹

“‘And your gates shall be open continually,’ *etc.* (Isaiah 60:11).... The gates shall be open, so that **riches** may be brought into the **City [of God]** from **every** quarter. And, as burdens are usually carried in the daytime, the ‘day’ he says will not be enough – so **vast** shall be **the crowd of those who bring into it precious treasures.** And therefore, the carrying will be so constant that it will be necessary to keep the city-gates open night and day. When he says that [‘the forces’ or the ‘wealth’ or] ‘the riches of the Gentiles’ shall belong to the Church – let us not view this as referring to carnal luxury, but to **obedience which the whole World shall render to God in the Church!** For he says that what is offered to God belongs to the Church – because **here God has nothing separate from it.**”⁴⁰⁰

“‘You shall suck the milk of the Gentiles’ (Isaiah 60:16)... It appeared to be incredible that the Church, which had been reduced to calamities so great and so numerous, **would be restored and spread** throughout the **whole World**... But at length, out of that slender remnant which had as it were been snatched from the burning – to the great astonishment of all, she was restored. And her **seed** was **spread** far and **wide** – through **every part of the World**.”⁴⁰¹

“‘A little one shall become a thousand’ (Isaiah 60:22)... Let us consider that what was said to the Jews, is now said also of us! That is, though we are few in number and inconsiderable and appear to be very near destruction – still **the Church** cannot perish, but shall be **enlarged and multiplied** till it becomes **very numerous!**”⁴⁰²

“‘Before all the nations’ (Isaiah 61:11). He again shows that the boundaries of the Church shall no longer be as narrow as they formerly were. For the Lord will cause her to fill the whole World.”⁴⁰³

“‘I will gather all nations and tongues; and they shall come and see My glory’ (Isaiah 66:18). He means that the knowledge of God shall be spread throughout the whole World. For the Greeks, Italians, Parthians, Cilicians and other nations had heard nothing about pure religion and the true worship of God. And the whole World was plunged in the deepest darkness of ignorance. He therefore **promises** that the glory of God **shall be known** in **every part of the World**. The word ‘**nations**’ is **emphatic**. For at that time the Lord was known to not more than one people. But now He has revealed Himself to all.”⁴⁰⁴

“Grant, I say, that we may raise our eyes upward, and consider how much power You have conferred upon Your only-begotten Son! Grant also that He may rule and govern us by His Spirit, protect us by His faithfulness and guardianship, and **compel the whole World to promote our salvation!**... **May we never grow weary, but learn to overcome the whole World!**”⁴⁰⁵

“O grant that we, being mindful of these benefits, may ever submit ourselves to You! May we desire only to raise our voice for this end – that the whole World may submit itself to You, and that those who seem now to rage against You, may at length be brought, as well as we, to render You obedience, so that Your Son Christ may be Lord of all!”⁴⁰⁶

“May we daily solicit You in our prayers and never doubt but that under the government of Your Christ, You can again **gather together the whole World**, though it be dispersed miserably! May we persevere in this warfare to the end, until we shall at length know that we have not in vain hoped in You -- and that our prayers have not been in vain, when Christ shall exercise the power given to Him for our salvation and for that of the whole World!”⁴⁰⁷

‘My Name shall be great among the Gentiles!’ Malachi 1:11. Here “God shows that He no longer cared [only] for the Jews. For he would bid altars to be reared for Him everywhere and throughout all parts of the World – so that He might purely be **worshipped** by **all nations**... For the doctrine of **salvation** would be propagated to the **utmost** extremities of the **Earth**... The worship of God will flourish everywhere.”⁴⁰⁸

“‘Do not think that I have come to destroy the Law!’ [Matthew 5:17]. Christ now declares that **His doctrine** is so far from being **at variance** with **the Law**, that it agrees perfectly with the

Law.... Devout worshippers of God would never have embraced the Gospel, if it had been a revolt from **the Law....** Christ declared that **He had not come to destroy the Law....** He immediately adds...that it is impossible for even one point of the Law to fail – and pronounces a **curse** on those teachers who do not faithfully labour to **maintain** its authority....

“While He invites and exhorts the Jews to receive the Gospel, He still retains them in obedience to the Law.... A **New** Covenant...would **not** be different from the **first....** On the contrary, its design was to give a perpetual sanction to the Covenant which He had made from the beginning with His Own people. ‘I will write My Law, says He, in their hearts; and I will remember their iniquities no more’ (Jeremiah 31:33-34). By these words, He is so far from departing from the former Covenant that – on the contrary – He declares that it will be confirmed and ratified when it shall be succeeded by the New. This is also the meaning of Christ’s words when He says that ‘He came to fulfil the Law’....

“We must not imagine that the coming of Christ has freed us from the authority of the Law! For it is the Eternal Rule of a devout and holy life.... Let us therefore learn to maintain inviolable this sacred tie between the Law and the Gospel! -- which many, improperly, attempt to break.... Sooner shall Heaven fall to pieces, and the whole frame of the World become a mass of confusion – than the stability of the Law shall give way.... There is nothing in the Law that is unimportant, nothing that was put there at random; and so it is impossible that a single letter shall perish....

“Christ here speaks expressly of **the Commandments** of life, or **the Ten Words** which **all** children of God ought to take as **the Rule of their life.** He therefore declares that they who do not restrain their disciples within obedience to the Law, are **false and deceitful teachers....** They who weaken in the slightest degree the authority of the Law, are unworthy to occupy a place in the Church.... **They who recommend both by word and example the keeping of the Law – are honest and faithful Ministers....** Christ banished from His Kingdom all who accustom men to any contempt of the Law.... Observe the description He gives of good and holy teachers – that they not only by words but chiefly by the example of life exhort men to keep the Law....

“He takes a passing notice of ‘the Scribes’ – who were labouring to throw a stain on the doctrine of the Gospel, as if it were the ruin of the Law.... The Pharisees debase the Law, so that their righteousness is mere filth. It is a mistake, however, to suppose...that Christ raises His disciples to a higher degree of perfection....

“Nothing was farther from the design of Christ than to alter or innovate anything in the **Commandments of the Law.** There, God has once [and for all] fixed **the Rule of life – which He will never retract.** But as the Law had been...turned to a profane meaning, Christ vindicates it against such corruptions and points out its true meaning from which the Jews had departed....

“That Christ...intended to make no corrections in the precepts of the Law is very clear.. For those who desire to enter into life by their good works, He gives no other injunction that to **keep the Commandments of the Law,** Matthew 19:17. >From no other source do the Apostles as

well as Christ Himself draw **the rules for a devout and holy life.**"⁴⁰⁹

"**The Law of God** is divided into two tables -- of which the former contains the duties of piety and the latter the duties of charity. **So, in prayer** -- Christ enjoins us to consider and seek the glory of God, and at the same time permits us to consult our own interests....

'**May Your Kingdom come!** May Your will be done on **Earth**, as it is in **Heaven!**' [Matthew 6:10].... Because the Word of God is like a royal sceptre, we are bidden here to entreat Him to bring **all** men's minds and hearts into voluntary **obedience** to it.... God, therefore, sets up His Kingdom by humbling the whole World -- though in different ways -- taming the wantonness of some, and breaking the ungovernable pride of others. We should desire this to be done every day -- in order that God may gather churches to Himself from **all** quarters of the **World**; may **extend** and **increase** their **numbers**; enrich them with His gifts; establish due order among them. On the other hand, [may He] **beat down** all the enemies of pure doctrine and religion; dissipate their counsels; defeat their attempts!

"Hence it appears that there is good ground for the precept which enjoins daily **progress**. For human affairs are never so prosperous as when the **impurities** of vice are **purged away** -- and **integrity** flourishes in **full vigour**.... With **ever-increasing** splendour, He displays His light and truth by which the darkness...of Satan's kingdom vanish; are extinguished, and pass away....

"By this prayer we ask that He...may bring **all men** under His dominion and may lead them to meditate on the **heavenly** life.... We therefore pray that God would exert His power both by the Word and by the Spirit, so that the **whole World** may willingly submit to Him... 'till they **all** be made His footstool' (Hebrews 10:13)...to **obey His justice**.... Again, as the **Kingdom of God** is **continually growing** and **advancing** to the end of the World -- we must pray every day that it may come. For to whatever extent iniquity abounds in the World -- to such an extent the Kingdom of God, which brings along with it perfect righteousness, has **not yet come**."⁴¹⁰

"When therefore you shall see the abomination of desolation which is described by Daniel the Prophet standing in the holy place, let him that reads understand!' (Matthew 24:15).... I must examine the passage which is quoted by Christ....

"The Angel predicts what is called the final abrogation...which was to take place at the coming of Christ. For, after having exhorted believers to unshaken constancy, he fixes absolutely the time both of the ruin and of the **restoration**. 'From the time,' says he, 'that the daily sacrifice shall be taken away and the abomination of desolation set up, there will be 1290 days. Blessed is he who shall wait till he comes to the 1335 days!' (Daniel 12:11-12)....

"I am aware that this passage is tortured in a variety of ways.... As that message was sad and melancholy, He again recalls the Prophet to 'one year' and 'two years' and 'six months.' These words denote both the duration and the close of the calamities.... The Spirit therefore exhorts believers to prepare themselves for the exercise of patience, not only for a single...long period -- but to lay their account with enduring [intergenerational] tribulations through an uninterrupted succession of **many ages**....

"The calamity of the Church shall last through a 'time' [and] 'times' and 'half a time' (Daniel

7:25)...by a very long continuance of calamities... It is customary with men in adversity to compute time not by years or months but by 'days' -- a single '**day**' being, in their estimation, equal to a '**year**.' He says that those will be **happy** -- who bear up to the end of that period.... There is no reason why **the Papists should talk so haughtily...** For Christ does not restrict us...to the primacy of the Roman see."⁴¹¹

"The nature of the apostolic function is clear from the command, 'You must go into **all** the World and preach the Gospel to **every** creature!' (Mark 16:15). No fixed limits are given them, but **the whole World** is assigned to be reduced under the obedience of Christ, so that by **spreading the Gospel as widely as they could,** they might **everywhere** erect His Kingdom."⁴¹²

"We should be instant in prayer -- so that we may gain **daily increase** of the Spirit. '**Increase,**' I say -- because before we can conceive any prayer, we must receive of the first-fruits of the Spirit."⁴¹³

"There is no element and no part of the World which...is not intent on the **hope** of the resurrection.... All creatures...are sustained by **hope**.... From **hope** comes the swiftness of the sun, the moon, and all the stars in their constant courses; the continued obedience of the Earth in producing its fruits; the unwearied motions of the air; and the ready power of the water to flow.

"God has given to each its proper task, and...at the same time inwardly implanted the **hope** of renewal.... He has given them a **hope** of a better condition.... They have a **hope** of being **freed**...until they...finally bring forth a **joyful and happy fruit**.... Also we ourselves who have the firstfruits of the Spirit...are saved by **hope**.... He promises us **victory** over **every** kind of enemy.... This outcome...is always granted to them -- that they obtain the **victory!**...

"If the **rejection of the Jews** has been able to occasion the reconciliation of the Gentiles -- will not **their reception back be much more powerful?** And should it not raise them even from the dead?... Since therefore God has marvellously brought life out of death and light out of darkness -- how much more, he reasons, we ought to hope that the resurrection of a people virtually dead, will bring the Gentiles to life?!.... The '**fullness of the Gentiles**' means a **great number**.... When the Gentiles have come in, the Jews will at the same time return from their defection to the obedience of faith.... Paul wanted here to point to the **consummation of the Kingdom of Christ, which is by no means confined to the Jews but includes the whole World.**"⁴¹⁴

"The Prophet [Isaiah 64:4], having mentioned **earthly benefits**, was led on...to **glory** in the **spiritual blessedness** which is laid up in **Heaven** for **believers**.... The Scripture testifies, that **Christ now holds dominion over the Heaven and the Earth**.... The end has not yet come, when all things will be put into a right and tranquil state. Because **Christ has not yet finished subduing all His enemies.** Now that must [still] be brought about, because the Father has placed Him at His right hand with the understanding that He is not to resign the authority that He has received until they have been subdued under His power."⁴¹⁵

"We call the Roman Pontiff Antichrist.... Paul says that Antichrist would sit in the temple of God (Second Thessalonians 2:4).... All the heresies and schisms which have existed from the beginning, belong to the kingdom of **Antichrist.** Yet, when Paul predicts an approaching

apostasy, he signifies by this description that this seat of abomination shall then be erected when a universal defection shall have seized the Church -- notwithstanding many Members dispersed in different places persevere in the unity of the faith....

“This calamity was neither to be introduced by one man, nor to terminate in one man.... Second Thessalonians 2:3; Daniel 7:25.... It is evident that the Roman Pontiff has impudently transferred to himself some of the peculiar and exclusive prerogatives of God and Christ. It cannot be doubted that he [the Pope of Rome] is the leader and standard-bearer of this impious and abominable kingdom”⁴¹⁶ of the Antichrist.

“Anyone who has learned from Scripture what are the things that belong particularly to God, and who on the other hand considers well what the Pope usurps for himself -- will not have much difficulty in recognizing Antichrist, even though he were a ten-year-old boy.... Paul sets Antichrist in the very sanctuary of God.

“He is **not** an enemy from **outside** but from [inside] the household of faith, and opposes Christ under the very **name** of Christ.... It is **the temple of God**” -- viz. **the Church** -- “in which the Pope holds sway....

“The name ‘Antichrist’ does not designate a single individual, but a single kingdom which extends throughout many generations.... He [the Apostle Paul, earlier in Second Thessalonians chapter two,] had predicted the **destruction** of the reign of Antichrist; and now describes the **manner** of his destruction. He will be **annihilated** by the Word of the Lord....

“Paul does **not** think that Christ will accomplish this in a single moment.” Yet nevertheless, sooner or later, “Antichrist would be completely and utterly destroyed.... **Christ** will scatter the darkness in which Antichrist will reign, by the **rays** which He will emit **before** His coming -- just as the sun, **before** becoming visible to us, chases away the darkness of the night with its bright light. This **victory of the Word** will therefore be seen in the World. For ‘Breath of His Mouth’ simply means His Word, as in Isaiah 11:4, the passage to which Paul appears to be alluding....

“True and sound **doctrine**...is represented as being sufficient to put an end to all ungodliness, and as destined at all times to be **victorious** over all the devices of Satan. It is also a commendation, when a little further on the **preaching** of this doctrine is referred to as Christ’s ‘coming’ to us....

When he adds...‘that the Word of the Lord may **run** and **be glorified**’ -- he shows that he is concerned...for the entire Church.... So that the doctrine of the Gospel may **run** on its course.... The ‘course’...means dissemination; while ‘**glory**’ means...that his **preaching may have power** and **efficacy** to **refashion men** in the image of God.”⁴¹⁷

“The dominion mentioned in the [eighth] Psalm, was lost to us in Adam.... It must again be restored.... Now the restoration begins with Christ as the Head.... We are to look to Him whenever the dominion of man over all creatures is spoken of.... It hence now appears that here the ‘World to come’ is not that which we hope for after the resurrection, but that which began at the beginning of Christ’s Kingdom. But it will no doubt have its full accomplishment!”⁴¹⁸

In Revelation twenty, “John has described a twofold resurrection...; namely one [resurrection] of the **soul**, **before** judgment -- and another when **the body will be raised up** and when the soul also will be raised up to glory. ‘Blessed,’ says he, ‘are those who have part in the first resurrection; on them the second death takes **no effect**’ (Revelation 20:6).... That **first resurrection**...is the only **entrance** -- to **beatific glory**.”⁴¹⁹

“The Chiliasts [alias the Premillennialists] **limited** the **reign** of Christ to a thousand years.... Those who assign **only** a thousand years to the children of God to enjoy..., observe not how great an insult they offer to Christ and His Kingdom....

“If their blessedness is to have an end, the Kingdom of Christ...is temporary. In short, they are either most ignorant of all divine things -- or they maliciously aim at subverting the whole grace of God and power of Christ which cannot have their **full** effect unless sin is obliterated, death swallowed up, and **eternal** life **fully** renewed....

“This **fiction**” and “**dream**” is “too **puerile** to need or to deserve refutation.” Nor do they “receive any countenance from the Apocalypse [viz. Revelation 20:4], from which it is known that they extracted a gloss for their error -- since the thousand years **there** mentioned, refer **not to the eternal blessedness of the Church**, but only to” those events “which **await** the Church Militant **in this World**” (and thus here on **Earth**).⁴²⁰

“This is the **cause** of God.... He will take it in hand and bring it to a **happy** outcome.... Whatever resistance we see offered today by almost all the World...to the progress of the truth – we must not doubt that our Lord will finally break through all the undertakings of man and make a passage for His Word.... Let us **hope boldly**, then, even more than we can understand! He will **surpass** our thoughts and our **hope**.”⁴²¹

“We pray, therefore, that God’s reign may come – that is to say, that the Lord may from day to day **multiply** the number of His faithful believers who celebrate His glory in all works, and that He may **continually spread** on them **more largely** the affluence of His graces.... Similarly, we ask that from day to day, He may through **new growths** spread His light and enlighten His truth – so that **Satan** and the lies and the darkness of his reign may be **dissipated** and abolished.”⁴²²

“**Our doctrine** must stand sublime above all the glory of the World, and **invincible** by all its power. Because it is not ours, but that of the Living God and His Anointed Whom the Father has appointed King so that He may **rule from Sea to Sea** and from the rivers **even to the ends of the Earth** -- and so rule, as to **smite the whole Earth**...with the mere **Rod of His Mouth** and break them into pieces like a potter’s vessel according to the magnificent predictions of the Prophets respecting His Kingdom. Daniel 2:34; Isaiah 11:4; Psalm 2:9.”⁴²³

– **JOHN CALVIN**, French Restorer of Biblical Presbyterianism (A.D. 1536)

138) “Idolatry ought not [only] to be suppressed, but the idolater ought to die the death -- unless that we will accuse God!... A Commandment was given that if it be heard that idolatry is committed in any one city, inquisition shall be taken; and if it be found true, that then the whole body of the People shall arise and destroy that city... For the Commandment ‘The idolater shall die the death’ -- is perpetual....

“God has raised up the People, and by His Prophet has anointed a king to take vengeance upon the king and upon his posterity. Which fact, God since that time has never retreated; and therefore to me it remains a constant and clear Commandment to all the People professing God, and having the power to punish vice -- which they ought to do, in the like case.”⁴²⁴

“We perceive how Satan in his members, the Antichrist of our time, cruelly rages seeking to downthring and to destroy the Evangel of Christ... We ought according to our bounden duty to strive in our Master’s cause even unto death -- being certain of the victory in Him..”⁴²⁵

“Arise, O Lord, and let Thine enemies be confounded! Let them who hate Thy godly Name flee from Thy presence! Give Thy servants strength to speak Thy Word with boldness! And let all nations cleave to the true knowledge of Thee!”⁴²⁶

“The thirst of the poor people, as well as of the nobility here, is wondrous great! This puts me in comfort that Christ Jesus shall triumph for a space here in the north...parts of the Earth.”⁴²⁷

– **JOHN KNOX**, Calvin’s Pupil and Pioneer Scottish Presbyterian Reformer (A.D. 1558)

139) “Verily, if the Jews be in such great plenty converted unto Christ, and that with the commonality of the Gentiles, as we have before declared [cf. Romans 11:12-32] – then shall there remain much faith which Christ shall find, when He returns to us... We may answer that here is no contrariety” between this prediction and that in Luke 18:8 (which latter rather seems to refer to Christ’s coming to the land of Palestine during the lifetime of Luke’s immediate addressees).

“The Jews shall return [or get converted] again, and shall acknowledge their Messiah and shall confirm the Gentiles [cf. Romans 11:15].... Indeed, according to almost all the Prophets, especially Isaiah, the happiness of the Church shall be great – which it has not yet attained to. But it is probable that it will then [on the conversion of the Jews] attain to it.”⁴²⁸

– **PETER MARTYR VERMIGLI**, Italian Protestant Professor at Strassburg (A.D. 1559)

140) “Christ [is the Stone] Whose Kingdom at the beginning should be small and without beauty to man’s judgment -- but should at length grow and fill the whole Earth.... The Jews...and

the Gentiles shall embrace Christ... The World shall be restored to a new life... The time shall come that **the whole nation of the Jews**, though not every one particularly, **shall be joined to the Church of Christ.**”⁴²⁹

– **GENEVA BIBLE** of the British Protestants exiled in Switzerland, edited by John Knox and William Whittingham, brother-in-law of Mrs. John Calvin (A.D. 1560)

141) “**May Your Kingdom come!** That is, so govern us by Your Word and Spirit – that we may **submit ourselves more and more to You!** Preserve and **increase Your Church!** Keep on destroying the works of the devil and all power that would exalt itself against You, and also all wicked counsels devised against Your Holy Word – till the full perfection of Your Kingdom shall have come!...

“Therefore preserve and **strengthen us by the power of Your Holy Spirit**, so that we may...**not sink in this spiritual warfare but constantly and strenuously resist** our foes till at last **we obtain a complete victory!**”⁴³⁰

– **HEIDELBERG CATECHISM**, German Reformed Churches’ Standard (A.D. 1562)

142) “The *Belgic Confession* of Guido de Bres declares: “**We still use the testimonies taken out of the Law** and the Prophets, to confirm us in the doctrine of the Gospel, and to regulate our life in all honesty to the glory of God according to His will.... **The True Church** must be distinguished from all sects which call themselves the Church.... The True Church may certainly be known, from which no man has a right to separate himself....

“As for **the false church** -- she ascribes more power and authority to herself and her ordinances than to the Word of God, and will not submit herself to the yoke of Christ. Neither does she administer the Sacraments as appointed by Christ in His Word, but adds to and takes from them..... She relieth more upon men than upon Christ, and persecutes those who live holily according to the Word of God and rebuke her for her errors, covetousness, and idolatry....

“We believe that our gracious God...**will that the World should be governed by certain Laws...** For this purpose, **He has committed the sword to the Magistrate...** Their office is...that they protect the sacred Ministry, and thus may **remove and prevent all idolatry** and false-worship, so that the kingdom of **Antichrist may be destroyed** and the **Kingdom of Christ promoted.** They **must also diligently countenance the preaching of the Word of the Gospel everywhere** -- so that **God may be honoured and worshipped by everyone**, as he commands in His Word.”⁴³¹

– **BELGIC CONFESSIOIN**, Dutch Reformed Churches’ Standard (A.D. 1562)

143) “This is the day which the Lord has wrought. To You, O Lord, the praise hereof is due. You have turned our mourning into joy. You have put to silence the spirit of error. You have inflamed the hearts of Your people. You have brought princes and **kings** to the **obedience** of Your Son Jesus **Christ**. You have opened the eyes of **the World** to espy out and to cry out for the comfort of the Gospel.”⁴³²

– **JOHN JEWEL**, Episcopalian Bishop of Salisbury in England (A.D. 1562)

144) “God in His mercy has permitted the powers of the intellect to remain – though differing greatly from what was in man before the fall. God **commands us** to **cultivate** our natural talents – and meanwhile adds both gifts and **success**. And it is obvious that we make no progress in all the arts – without **God’s** blessing....

“Children are to be brought up by the parents in the fear of the Lord. And parents are to provide for their children, remembering the saying of the Apostle: ‘If anyone does not provide for his relatives, he has disowned the faith and is worse than an unbeliever’ (First Timothy 5:8)....

“Especially they should teach their children honest trades or professions, by which they may support themselves. They should keep them from idleness, and in all these things instil in them true faith in God – lest through a lack of confidence or too much security or filthy greed, they become dissolute and achieve no success. And it is **most certain** that those works which are done by parents in true faith by way of **domestic duties** and the management of their households – are in **God’s** sight holy and truly **good works**. They are **no less pleasing** to God than **prayers, fasting and almsgiving**....

“Christ was from all eternity predestinated and foreordained by the Father to be the Saviour of the World.... Christ will return unto judgment...when **Antichrist**, having corrupted true religion, **shall**...most cruelly waste the Church.... Christ shall return to redeem His, and to abolish **Antichrist**....

“We teach that the will of God is set down unto **us in the Law of God** -- to wit, what He would have us to do or not to do what is good and just or what is evil and unjust. We therefore confess that ‘The Law is good and holy’ (Romans 7:12); and that this Law is, by the finger of God, either ‘written in the hearts of men’ (Romans 2:15) and so is called the Law of Nature or engraven in the two tables of stone and more largely expounded in the books of Moses (Exodus 20:1-17 & Deuteronomy 5:22)....

“We must condemn the Donatists who pinned up the Church within the corners of Africa. Neither do we assent to **the Roman clergy**, who vaunt **the Church of Rome alone**.... We do not allow of the doctrine of the **Romish prelates**, who would make **the Pope** the general pastor

and supreme head of the Church Militant...and the very Vicar of Jesus Christ....

“By taking away the Romish head, we do not bring any confusion or disorder into the Church. For we teach that the government of the Church which the Apostles set down, is sufficient... From the beginning...it lacked such a **Romish head** as is now pretended.... **The Romish head** [the Pope] maintains indeed his tyranny and corruption which have **been brought into the Church**....

“We know what manner of assemblies the primitive Church formerly had in secret corners -- being under **the tyranny of Roman Emperors**.... In ancient times there were **no** such things as canonical hours...as **the Papists’** manner is.... They have many absurd things.... **Popish** visiting...has many absurd things in it...as are not approved by the canonical Scriptures....

“**The magistracy**...is ordained by God Himself for the peace and quietness of mankind; and so that he should have the chief place in the World.... Let him therefore hold the Word of God in his hands, and look that nothing be taught contrary thereunto! In like manner, let him govern the people committed to him by God, with good laws made according to the Word of God!”⁴³³

– **SECOND HELVETIC CONFESSION**, Swiss Reformed Church Standard (A.D. 1566)

145) “God has not only foreseen but eternally decreed to create man in order to manifest His glory (First Corinthians 11:7) in **saving** by His grace.... The Lord therefore at the time which seemed good to Him to execute His eternal purpose, created man male and female in His image and likeness – that is to say, in **righteousness** and true **holiness** (Genesis 1:27; Ecclesiastes 7:29; Ephesians 4:24)....

“Those who say that we find fault with **good works**, on the pretext that we say that we are justified by Jesus Christ alone received by faith alone – falsely slander us.... **The Law** -- which is called the ‘**Ten Commandments**’ – is divided into two tables, the one describes our duty to God and the other our duty to our neighbour....

“Even St. Gregory is a witness, who said that the title of ‘**Universal Bishop**’ belonged only to **the Antichrist**. And also St. Jerome, who makes the Bishop of Engubio or any other place equal to that of **Rome**....

“The duty of the children of God consists not only in serving God in whatever place they are, or whatever ruins the Church is in. But also, when it pleases God to **restore these ruins**, here or there, not being limited to any one nation or people...when it pleases Him to raise up His standard again – which is the Ministry of His Holy Word. The duty of the children of God, I say, is to join themselves to the flock and to separate from those who are not of the flock – following the exhortations which the Prophets make (Isaiah 49:22 & 52:11-12); and what the Lord says: ‘There where the corpse is, there will the vultures gather!’ (Matthew 24:28)....

“As long as we are living here below, we shall not cease to **advance** the Kingdom of God.... By our endurance, God helping, we shall fight, beat down and **overcome**.... For it must come to pass...that this word uttered by the Son of God be fulfilled: ‘Every plant which my heavenly Father has not planted, shall be uprooted’ (Matthew 15:13). Such is our faith; such is our **hope**.”⁴³⁴

The World shall “be **restored** from death to **life** again [cf. Romans 11:15], at the time when the Jews too shall come and be called to the profession of the Gospel!”⁴³⁵ Cf. Romans 11:25-32.

– **THEODORE BEZA**, Calvin’s Swiss Successor in Geneva (A.D. 1565)

146) “**All the nations** shall be blessed in Abraham! Hence I gather that the nation of the Jews shall be called and converted to the participation of this blessing [Romans 11:11-32]. When, and how – God knows! But that it **shall** be done **before** the end of the World – we **know!**”⁴³⁶

– **WILLIAM PERKINS**, English Theologian at Cambridge (A.D. 1579)

147) “We abhor and detest all contrary religion and doctrine; but chiefly all kind of **Papistry** in general and particular heads -- even as they are now damned and confuted by the Word of God and Kirk of Scotland. But in special, we detest and refuse the usurped authority of that **Roman Antichrist**, upon the Scriptures of God.”

We detest and refuse: “all his tyrannous laws made upon indifferent things against our Christian liberty; his erroneous doctrines...; his five bastard sacraments; with his rites, ceremonies, and false doctrine...; his cruel judgment against infants departing without the Sacrament...; his blasphemous opinion of transubstantiation...; his cruelty against the innocent divorced; his devilish Mass; his blasphemous priesthood; his profane sacrifice for the sins of the dead....; his canonisation of men, calling upon angels or departed saints; worshipping of images, relicks, and crosses...; his purgatory, [and] prayers for the dead.”

Craig then further condemns Rome’s “praying or speaking in a strange language; his processions and blasphemous litany; his multitude of advocates or mediators...with auricular confessions...; his holy water, baptizing of bells..., [and] his erroneous...[1545f] Decrees made at Trent...against the Kirk of God....or against the Word of God and doctrine of this True Reformed Kirk.... Seeing that many are stirred up by Satan -- and that **Roman Antichrist**...use the holy Sacraments in the Kirk deceitfully...to corrupt and subvert secretly God’s true religion within the Kirk...under vain hope of **the Pope’s dispensation** devised against the Word of God to his greater confusion and their double condemnation in the day of the Lord Jesus -- we, therefore, willing to take away all suspicion of hypocrisy and of such double dealing with God and His Kirk, **protest!**”⁴³⁷

– **JOHN CRAIG** , *Second Scots Confession of Faith* (A.D. 1580)

148) “This enterprise [for England to establish colonies in North America] may stay the Spanish King from flowing over all the face of that waste form of America...and consequently **abate the pride of Spain and of the supporter of the great Antichrist of Rome** and pull him down in equality to his neighbour princes and consequently cut off the common mischiefs that come to all Europe by the peculiar abundance of his [West] Indian Treasure.... We shall, by planting there, enlarge the glory of the Gospel. And from England, [we shall] plant sincere religion and provide a safe and a sure place to receive people from all parts of the World that are forced to flee for the truth of God’s Word.”⁴³⁸

RICHARD HAKLUYT, Welsh Advocate of colonizing North America (A.D. 1584)

149) “When Simon Peter acknowledge Christ to be the Son of God (Matthew 16), the Saviour, perceiving the hand of His Father in it, answered.... He would build His Church so strong, that the gates of hell should not prevail against it....

The following five periods comprehend the general history of the Church. First, the suffering time of the Church -- which continued from the Apostle’s Age about three 300 years. Second, the flourishing time of the Church – which lasted [an]other 300 hundred years. Third, the declining time of the Church – which comprehends other 300 years during which...the Church although...in outward profession of doctrine and religion it was something tolerable, notwithstanding much corruption of doctrine with superstition and hypocrisy had then crept in. Fourth, followed the time of the **Antichrist**...or desolation of the Church – which contains the space of 400 years...from Gregory the Seventh called Hildebrand [and] Innocent the Third...till the time of John Wickcliffe and John Huss.... Fifth and last, after this time of **Antichrist** reigning in the Church...by violence and tyranny, followed the **Reformation**.... It may properly be called the **purging of the Church**....and the number of the **True Church** increasing **greatly**....

“Infallible rules of Scripture, which no man can deny, prove that the doctrine of the Pope’s Church is not catholic, but full of errors and heresies....contrary to the rules of God’s Word and the first institution of the Church of Rome.... All readers and rulers may...see how the Lord did work against her.... By her may be advertised and learned what a perilous thing it is for men and women in authority upon blind zeal and opinion to stir up persecution in Christ’s Church.... While they think to persecute ‘heretics’ – they stumble at the same Stone as did the Jews in persecution Christ and His True Members to death, **to their own confusion and destruction.**”⁴³⁹

“Notwithstanding, when both the [Islamic] Turk and the [Antichristian] Pope shall do against it [viz. True Christianity] what they can – the truth and grace of God’s Testament shall fructify and

increase by such means as the Lord shall work. Which begins already (praise to the Lord!) to come graciously and luckily **forward in most places.**”⁴⁴⁰

– **JOHN FOXE**, English Prebendary of Salisbury Cathedral (A.D. 1587)

150) “There shall arise an Antichrist and enemy to God and His Church. He shall be head of a false hypocritical Church. He shall claim a supreme power on Earth. He shall usurp the power of God.... But victory he shall not have.... For since we see God has promised not only in the World to come but also in this World to give us victory over them – let us in assurance hereof **strongly trust in our God!**”⁴⁴¹

– **JAMES THE SIXTH**, King of Scotland (A.D. 1588f)

151) “The Christian Magistrate is bound to observe the judicial laws of Moses, as well as the Jewish Magistrate was.... He is obliged to those things which in the judicial law which are unchangeable and common to all nations.... Things immutable, and common to all nations, are the laws concerning moral trespass, sins against the Moral Law -- as murder, adultery, theft, enticing away from God, blasphemy, striking of parents. Now, that the Christian Magistrate is bound to observe these judicial laws of Moses which appoint the punishment of sins against the Moral Law.”⁴⁴²

– **JOHANNES PISCATOR**, German Theological Professor at Herborn (A.D. 1590)

152) “He who was punishable by death under the judicial law, is punishable by death still; and he who was not punishable by death then, is not to be punished by death now. And so much for the first argument from the Law of God.”⁴⁴³

Revelation 9:11-14 refers to “**Antichrist the Pope**, king of hypocrites and Satan’s ambassador” and to **Islam’s “Arabs, Saracens, Turks and Tartars.”** In Revelation 11:2-7, the forty-two months are “1260 days, as is said in the next verse. That is, 1260 **years** – a day for a year, as often in Ezekiel and Daniel, which thing I noted before [at Revelation] 2:10.

“The beginning of these 1260 years we account from the passion of Christ..., and the end of these years precisely falls into **the Popedome of Boniface VIII** who a little before the end of **the year 1294** A.D. entered the Popedom of Rome...having put in prison his predecessor Coelestinus whom by fraud...he deceived.... The Pope has his power out of hell, and is coming thence.”

But in Revelation 11:13, **'the remnant'** “shall fall [away] from the Pope, and glorify God.”

In Revelation 13:11-18, one sees that “the Pope’s kingdom is from the Earth, and leads to perdition.... He gives in his arms, two keys – and has the two swords carried before him. So **Boniface VIII**...showed himself one day in apparel as a **Pope**, and the next day in harness as the **Emperor**.... **The Pope** in ambition, cruelty, idolatry and blasphemy -- **did follow and imitate** the **Ancient Romans**.... **666** signifies **'Latinus'** or Latin – which notes the **Pope** or **Antichrist** who uses in all things the Latin tongue.”

In Revelation 16:10, **'the throne of the beast'** “signifies **the Pope's doctrine**.” In Revelation 16:19a, ‘the great city’ which gets ‘divided’ means “the whole number of them that shall **call** themselves Christians, whereof: some are so indeed; some are Papists and under pretence of Christ serve Antichrist; and some are neuters, which are neither on the one side nor of the other.” And in Revelation 16:19b, the ‘cities of the nations’ which fall signifies “**all strange religions – as of the Jews, Turks and others – which then shall fall with that great whore of Rome**, and be tormented in eternal pains.”

In Revelation 17:3f, **'the beast signifies Ancient Rome'**; and the **woman** that sits on it, the **New Rome** which is the **Papistry** whose cruelty and bloodshedding is declared by scarlet.... Christ Jesus...will take vengeance on this Romish Harlot..... This woman is **the Antichrist** – that is **the Pope**.” In Revelation 17:16, the ‘ten horns’ are “diverse nations – as the **Goths, Vandals, Huns, and other nations** which were once subject to Rome; [but] which **shall rise against it to destroy it**.”

In Revelation 18 to 20, regarding “the overthrow of the great Whore, the Angel Christ describes Rome” as “the sink of all abomination and devilishness and a kind of hell” and “the Romish prelates and merchants of souls.... The wicked shall be burned in continual fire that shall never be extinguished.... You must praise God, because the **Antichrist** and all wickedness is **taken out of the World**” – so that “we ought to **praise Him** for the **destruction** of the **Pope**....

“**Jesus Christ** our Judge shall be **victorious** and shall **triumph** over His **enemies**” and shall “**read down the Serpent's head**.” What John calls ‘the first resurrection’ means “to receive Jesus Christ in true faith and to **rise from sin** in newness of life.” Thus also **'Gog and Magog'** would be **destroyed** -- meaning “diverse and strange enemies of the Church of God [such] as **the Turks, the Saracens, and others**...by whom the Church of God should be grievously tormented.”

Finally, we see “Christ prepared to judgment with glory and majesty.” Then, “all things shall be **renewed** and **restored**.... For Christ is the Light that gives light to **everyone**.”⁴⁴⁴ Thus, Revelation 21 & 22.

-- **FRANCIS JUNIUS**, French Theology Professor at Leyden University (A.D. 1599)

153) “I, James, by the grace of God, **King of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c....** Our loving and well-disposed subjects...have been humble suitors unto us, that we would vouchsafe unto them our licence to make habitation [and] plantation, and to deduce a Colony of sundry of our people into that part of America commonly called Virginia and other parts and territories in America, either appertaining unto us or which are not now actually possessed by any Christian prince or people....

“We, greatly commending and graciously accepting of their desires for the furtherance of so noble a work which may, by the providence of Almighty God, hereafter tend to the glory of His divine majesty, in the propagating of Christian religion to such people as yet live in darkness and miserable ignorance of the true knowledge and worship of God and may in time bring the infidels and savages living in those parts to human civility and to a settled and quiet government; do, by these Letters Patents, graciously accept of, and agree to, their humble and well-intended desires.”⁴⁴⁵

“There shall arise an Antichrist and enemy to God and His Church. He shall be head of a false hypocritical Church. He shall claim a supreme power in Earth. He shall usurp the power of God.... But victory shall he not have.... For since we see God hath promised not only in ‘the World to come’ but also in this World to give us victory over them -- let us in assurance hereof strongly trust in our God!”⁴⁴⁶

– **JAMES THE FIRST**, King of England, Scotland, France and Ireland (A.D. 1606)

154) “With the pouring out of the seventh vial [Revelation 16:6 to 18:24] will come not the end of the World, but Armageddon – the complete defeat of both the Roman [or Papal] and Turkish [or Islamic] Antichrists and the calling of the fullness of the Jews [Romans 11:11-32]. Now shall the end of all the Prophets come, when all the enemies shall utterly and at once be abolished and when there shall be one sheepfold made upon Earth of all the elect both Jews and Gentiles under one Shepherd Jesus Christ. It is certain, that this Kingdom of Christ that is thus begin, shall be eternal and shall never be broken off again and discontinued -- and that it shall be translated at length from Earth into Heaven.”⁴⁴⁷

“The Lord shall be King over all the Earth. In that day, there shall be one Lord and His Name shall be one.’ Zechariah 14:9. ‘And the Lord shall destroy on this mountain the covering that covers all people, and the veil that is spread upon all nations. And the Lord God shall wipe away the tears from all faces, and He will take away the rebuke of His people out of all the Earth.’ Isaiah 25:7-8.

“‘For then they that dwell in the wilderness shall bow themselves down before Him, and His enemies shall lick the dust. The Kings of Arabia and Saba shall bring gifts. Yes, all kings shall worship Him. All nations shall serve Him.’ Psalm 72:9-11.”⁴⁴⁸

“Hearken therefore diligently awhile, and receive out of this Prophecy not some obscure signs but

most evident arguments – that your Husband [Christ] is about to arise **even now** for the avenging of your grief, and that He may give over this whore [the Papacy] unto your hands to pour out upon her the whole rage of your jealousy! And that you may more fully rejoice – receive withal tiding of the final destruction of the Turks [or Muslims] presently, **after** the destruction of Rome. For she must first be defeated....

“After that, the Christian World shall be purged from the wicked abominations of Rome by the last and universal slaughter thereof as this Revelation declares [in its chapters 16 to 19]. And lest anything should yet be wanting to the full heap of joy – here you may know that the **calling of the Jews to be a Christian nation is hereunto joined** [Romans 11:11-32]. **And withal, a most happy tranquillity from thence to the end of the World** [Revelation 20:1-11f].”⁴⁴⁹

-- **THOMAS BRIGHTMAN**, Puritan Rector of Hawnes in Bedfordshire (A.D. 1609)

155) “Among all our joys, there was no one that more filled our hearts than the blessed **continuance of the preaching** of God’s sacred Word among us.... Then, not to suffer this to fall to the ground, but rather to take it up, and to continue it in that state wherein the famous Predecessor of Your Highness did leave it -- nay, to go **forward with the confidence and resolution of a man in maintaining** the truth of Christ and **propagating it far and near** -- it is that which hath so bound and firmly knit the hearts of all Your Majesty’s loyal and religious people unto you, that your very name is precious among them.... And this their **contentment doth not diminish or decay, but every day increases** and takes strength when they observe that the **zeal of your Majesty toward the house of God doth not slack[en] or go backward but is more and more kindled**, manifesting itself abroad in the farthest parts of Christendom, **by writing in defence of the Truth (which hath given such a blow unto that **man of sin** as will not be healed).**”⁴⁵⁰

-- **THE EPISTLE DEDICATORY** to the Authorized King James Bible (A.D. 1611)

156) Archbishop James Ussher was perhaps the most renowned Commissioner appointed by England’s Parliament to attend the Westminster Assembly. Earlier he wrote: “As Christ is the Head of the Church which is His Body, so **Antichrist** is the head of the Romish Church which is his body.... This Antichrist is one who, under colour of being for Christ, and under the title of His Vice-gerent: exalteth himself above and against Christ; opposing himself unto Him in all His offices and ordinances both in Church and Commonwealth; bearing authority in the Church of God; ruling over that city with seven hills which did bear rule over Nations and put our Lord to death; a man of sin; a harlot; a mother of spiritual fornications to the kings and people of the Nations; a child of perdition, and a destroyer; establishing himself by lying-miracles and false-wonders. All [of] which marks together, do agree with none but **the Pope of Rome.**”⁴⁵¹

“Rome (whose faith was once renowned throughout all the World) [has] become ‘Babylon the mother of whoredoms and abominations of the Earth.... Rome is not to cease from being

Babylon, till her last destruction shall come upon her [Revelation 18]; and that unto her last gasp she is to continue in her spiritual fornications, alluring all nations unto her superstitions and idolatry.”⁴⁵²

“**The Pope**, neither of himself nor by any authority of the Church or See of Rome or by any other means with any other, hath any power or authority to depose the King.... **The Popish doctrine** of Equivocation and Mental Reservation, is ungodly -- and tendeth plainly to the subversion of all human society....

“The **Church of Rome** hath erred not only in those things which concern matters of practice and points of ceremonies, but also in matters of faith. The power which **the Bishop of Rome** now challengeth to be supreme head of the universal Church of Christ and to be above all emperors, kings and princes -- is a usurped power contrary to the example of **the Primitive Church**....

“The **Bishop of Rome** is so far from being the supreme head of the universal Church of Christ, that his works and doctrine do plainly discover him to be that ‘man of sin’ foretold in the Holy Scriptures [Second Thessalonians 2:3f], ‘whom the Lord shall consume with **the Spirit of His Mouth**’.... The doctrine of the **Church of Rome** concerning *Limbus Patrum* [or Limbo for the Old Testament Fathers who died before Christ did], *Limbus Puerorum* [or Limbo for all infants dying unbaptized], Purgatory, Prayers for the Dead, Pardons, Adorations of Images and Relics, and also Invocation of Saints – is vainly invented without all warrant of Holy Scripture...and is contrary unto the same.”⁴⁵³

– **JAMES USSHER**, Archbishop of Armagh and Carlisle (A.D. 1615f)

157) “The good Shepherd Who with the greatest perseverance loves His flock for which He has laid down His life has, by His outstretched hand, always bridled the rage of its persecutors at the right time and often in a wonderful way. He has also uncovered and destroyed the crooked paths and the deceptive counsels of the seducers.... Our faithful Saviour has shown His gracious presence by a similar favour to the Church of Holland, which was heavily persecuted for quite a few years.

“This Church was, after all, redeemed from the tyranny of the Romish Antichrist and the terrible idolatry of the Papacy -- by the mighty hand of God. In the midst of the dangers of such a long and drawn-out war, she was frequently protected in a wonderful way. And by unitedly holding fast to the true doctrine and discipline to the praise of her God, she greatly blossomed. This redounded to the admirable growth of the [Dutch] Republic and joy of the entire Reformed World.”⁴⁵⁴

– **SYNOD OF DORDT**, first international Reformed General Assembly (A.D. 1618f)

158) “In the Name of God, Amen! We whose names are underwritten, the loyal subjects of our dread sovereign Lord, King James -- by the grace of God of Great Britain, France, and Ireland King, Defender of the Faith, *etc.* Having undertaken for the glory of God and **advancements of the Christian Faith** and honour of our king and country a yoyage to plant the first colony in the northern parts of Virginia – do by these presents solemnly and mutually in the presence of God and one of another, covenant and combine ourselves together into a civil body politic for our **better** ordering and preservation and **furtherance** of the ends aforesaid.”⁴⁵⁵

– **MAYFLOWER COMPACT**, mutual Covenant of first American Pilgrims (A.D. 1620)

159) “An ordinance and Constitution of the Treasurer, Council and Company in England -- for a Council of State and General Assembly...for the first colony of Virginia... **First and principally, in the Advancement of the Honour and Service of God, and the Enlargement of His Kingdom amongst the Heathen People;** and next, in erecting of the said Colony in due obedience to his Majesty [King James of England], and all lawful Authority from his Majesty’s Directions; and **lastly, in maintaining the said People in Justice and Christian Conversation** among themselves.”⁴⁵⁶

– **CONSTITUTION ESTABLISHING VIRGINIAN GOVERNMENT**,
the first representative assembly in North America (A.D. 1621)

160) “**Before** all things shall be subdued to Christ, His Kingdom perfected and the last enemy death destroyed [First Corinthians 15:23-28] – the Gospel must be preached to those men to who you send. **To all men!** Further and hasten you this blessed, this joyful, this glorious consummation of all -- and happy reunion of all bodies to their souls – by preaching the Gospel to those men!”⁴⁵⁷

– **JOHN DONNE**, Anglican Dean of St. Paul’s to the Virginia Company (A.D. 1622)

161) “Whether there shall be any happiness of the Church here upon Earth before the Last Day; and of what kind it shall be?... Let us search through the Monuments of Histories, and then let us examine whether this (the fulfilment of Psalms 22:27 & 86:9 & 117:1) – hath been, or no[t]. We shall find indeed in some new found lands, detected in ours and our fathers’ memory, that the works of the **conversion of the nations** hath had some beginning and small **progress**.... The City [of God] is to be purged, purified, and **cleansed** by this [papal] **persecution** which at this day it suffers – so that by this means it may be by little and little prepared for that **Great Reformation** which the...thousand years shall bring....

“Many writers of the former and this present age have published many things concerning...a **Great Reformation** and the **conversion of the Jews** and the like. See **Theophrastus Paracelsus**, **Michael Sendivogius** in his *Treatise of Sulphur*, **Stephanus Pannonius’s** *Of the Circle of the Works and Judgments of God*, and **John Dobricius’s** notable book entitled *The Interpreter of Times*.... From hence it appears that our opinion concerning these 1000 years is not new and unheard of. For it was advocated also by the Italian Reformer **Alfonsus Conradus** of Mantua, in his 1574 *Commentary on Revelation*. And the Nuremberg Reformed **Andreas Osiander’s son Lucas** prophesied the future overturning of the Romish Papacy in his *Commentary on Daniel*. And the advent of a future Golden Age was described also by the French Reformed Theologians **Mattheus Cotterus** of Tours and **Pierre du Moulin**, by the Danish astronomer **Tycho Brahe**, and by the Leiden Professor **Carolus Gallus**.”⁴⁵⁸

– **JOHANN HEINRICH ALSTED**, German Professor in Transsylvania (A.D. 1627)

162) “All you people of Christ that are here oppressed, imprisoned and scurrilously derided! Gather yourselves together, your wives and little ones, and answer to your several names as you shall be **shipped** for **His** service in the Western World, and more especially for planting the United Colonies of New England, where you are to attend the service of **the King of kings**, upon the divulging of the proclamation by His heralds at arms.... Know [ye that] this [New England] is the place where the Lord will create a New Heaven and a New Earth in New Churches, and together with a New Commonwealth!”⁴⁵⁹

– **PROCLAMATION FOR COLONIZING NEW ENGLAND** (A.D. 1628)

163) “We...by these presents do...give and grant...all that part of **New England** in **America**.... And we do hereby...grant that...there shall be one Governor, one Deputy Governor, and eighteen Assistants...to be from time to time...chosen out of the freemen...whereby our said people, inhabitants there, may be **so religiously, peaceably, and civilly governed** – as their **good life and orderly conversation may win** and incite the **natives** of [that] country to the knowledge and **obedience** of the only true God and Saviour of mankind and the Christian Faith which, in our royal intention and the adventurers’ free profession is the **principal** end of this plantation!”⁴⁶⁰

– **CHARTER FOR SETTLEMENT OF MASSACHUSETTS** (A.D. 1629)

164) “It will be a service to the Church of great consequence to carry the Gospel into those parts of the World [in North America] **to help on** the coming of the **fullness** of the **Gentiles** [Romans

11:25] and to raise a Bulwark **against** the kingdom of **Antichrist** [Second Thessalonians 2:8 to 3:1].... The whole Earth is the Lord's garden.... He hath given it [the whole Earth] to the sons of men with a general Commission, Genesis 1:28, 'Increase and multiply and **replenish** the Earth and subdue it!' – which was **again** renewed to **Noah** [Genesis 9:1-7].

“The end is double and natural: that man may enjoy the fruits of the Earth; and that God might have His due glory from the creature. Why then should we stay striving here [in England] for places of habitation, *etc.* (many men spending as much labour and cost to recover or keep sometimes an acre or two of land as would procure them many and as good or better in another country) – and in the meantime suffer a whole Continent [in America], as fruitful and convenient for the use of man, to lie waste without any improvement?!”⁴⁶¹

– **JOHN WINTHROP**, English Puritan and later Governor of Massachusetts (A.D. 1629)

165) “Pray we then for the conversion of the Jews [Romans 11:25-32]!... Alter the order of the Patriarch's petition [*cf.* Genesis 9:27], saying: ‘God persuade Shem to dwell in the tents of Japheth!’ – and either **we or our posterity shall see it come to pass as we have requested!...**

“Whom He chooseth – shall be created, called, justified, sanctified, glorified! Because His purpose cannot be altered, His promise revoked. Let Manasseh repair the high places, rear altars for Baal! Let the Prodigal run from his Father, drink and swill, consume his portion! Let Saul make havoc of the saints, put them in prison, do many things against Jesus of Nazareth! **Then shall they come to themselves, mourn for their sins, and be saved!** For they are elected; beloved of Him Who is the same for ever! Were it not thus – what hope could the faithful have to see Babel ruined, the Roman whore burned, the Jew called, the Devil's kingdom destroyed, and Christ's perfected?”⁴⁶²

– **JOHN BARLOW**, English Minister in Devon (A.D. 1632)

166) “The end of this World shall not be – till the Jews are called. And how long after that – none yet can tell [Romans 11:25-36].... The casting off of the Jews was our [Gentile] calling. But the calling of the Jews shall not be our casting off but our greater enriching in grace [Romans 11:12-15]. And that, in two ways.

“First, in regard of the company of believers – when the thousands of Israel shall come in, which shall doubtless cause many Gentiles which now lie in ignorance, error and doubt – **to receive the Gospel** and join with them. The World shall then be a Golden World – rich in golden men, saith Ambrose. Secondly, in respect of the **graces** – which shall then **in more abundance** be rained down upon the Church!”⁴⁶³

– ELNATHAN PARR, English Minister of Palgrave (A.D. 1633)

167) “The Jews are not yet come in under Christ’s banner. But God, That hath persuaded Japhet to come into the tents of Shem, will persuade Shem to come into the tents of Japhet. Genesis 9:27. The ‘fullness of the Gentiles is not yet come in.’ Romans 11:25. But Christ, That hath the ‘utmost parts of the Earth given Him for His possession,’ Psalm 2:8, will gather all the sheep His Father hath given Him into one fold, [so] that there may be one sheepfold and one Shepherd. John 10:16. ‘The faithful Jews rejoiced to think of the calling of the Gentiles [Psalm 72]. And why should not we [Gentiles] joy to think of the [future] calling of the Jews [Romans 11:11-15]?...’

“As at the first coming of Christ, so -- at the overthrow of Antichrist [Second Thessalonians 2:8 & 3:1], the conversion of the Jews [Romans 11:11-32] -- there will be much joy.... These days make way -- for that day. Whensoever prophecies shall end in performances, then shall be a day of joying and glorying in the God of our salvation for ever. And therefore in the Revelation where this Scripture is cited, Revelation 21:4, is meant the conversion of the Jews and the glorious estate they shall enjoy before the end of the World....

“Let no man therefore despair! Nor, as I said before, let us despair of the conversion of those that are savages in other parts [Isaiah 60:5f & 66:19f] . How bad so ever they be, they are of the World [and not non-humans from another planet]. And if the Gospel be preached to them – Christ will be ‘believed on in the World’ [First Timothy 3:16]! Christ’s almighty power goeth with His Own Ordinance to make it effectual [Matthew 28:16-20].... And when the fullness of the Gentiles is come in – then comes the conversion of the Jews [Romans 11:25-32]!”⁴⁶⁴

– RICHARD SIBBES, English Theologian at Cambridge (A.D. 1635)

168) Voetius saw as the nearest purposes of missionary work the conversion of sinners and the ‘planting’ of the Church. But these purposes were ultimately subordinated to the great goal of all missionary activity – the spreading of the glory of the Lord all over the Earth.⁴⁶⁵

Voetius remarked that arguments plead for the interpretation favoured by the majority of exegetes – among whom Voetius especially mentioned the English Theologians – that the text [Romans 11:26] points towards a general and future conversion of the Jews. According to Voetius, this conversion of the Jews will certainly be preceded by the reformation of Christianity.⁴⁶⁶

– GYSBERT VOETIUS, Dutch Professor at Utrecht (A.D. 1636)

169) “All inhabitants of the Earth shall be subjected to Your Kingdom!” Psalm 22 is a “prophecy about the conversion of the Heathen throughout the whole World.” Ps. 47 forecasts that after His ascension, Christ “would rule everything as King” and bring about “the spiritual submission of the Heathen” and even of their “governors.” And Psalm 48 announces that from the Zion of the Christian Church, “salvation would go out into the whole World.”

Psalm 65 records that ‘all the ends of the Earth’ would come to faith in Christ. Psalm 72 predicts the prosperity of Messiah’s expansive ‘dominion’ in Turkey and the Mediterranean World and Arabia and Africa and even ‘unto the ends of the Earth.’ Indeed, Psalm 87 predicts the christianization even of the Egyptians and the Babylonians and the Philistines [cf. the Palestinians] and the Lebanese and the Ethiopians.

Psalm 110 promises to use Christ’s willing Church “to conquer the World.” Psalm 145 declares ‘all flesh shall praise His Holy Name’ -- meaning “all nations” and “all people.” Psalm 149 states believers shall “conquer the Devil, the World, and all the Power-wielders of this World.” And Psalm 150 means that ‘everything that has breath’ shall ‘praise the Lord.’⁴⁶⁷

Proverbs 4 teaches that the justified commandment-keeper alias ‘the righteous’ is “prosperous” and subject to daily “increase” -- and Proverbs 10 that he continues in “good condition till the end.” Proverbs 14 affirms that the keeping of God’s Ten Commandments alias ‘righteousness exalts a nation’ -- and Proverbs 21 that ‘the thoughts of the diligent tend only to plenteousness.’⁴⁶⁸

In Isaiah, asserts the *Dordt Dutch Bible*, ‘in the last days’ when Christ would be incarnated, “the Gospel will be preached throughout the whole World” -- so that “all nations shall flow” toward the Christian Church. For from that ‘Zion’ -- “the Law” would “go forth.” Indeed, ‘of the increase’ of Christ’s ‘government and peace there shall be no end.’

Thus ‘the Earth shall become full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea’ -- meaning that knowledge about the Lord Jesus Christ shall yet fill the entire Earth. And so, “to Him the nations of the entire Earth shall assemble” -- as, down through history, God’s ‘Ensign’ Jesus “Christ...gathers His Church from the four corners of the World” and as Christ’s Church starts to “grab hold of the Gentiles” and “conquer them.” This is “the victory which the Lord will give His Church.” For “the Church of Christ will fight against and conquer all her enemies” -- during “the onward flow of the Holy Gospel...into all the World.”

The Assyrians [cf. the Iraqis] and the Egyptians shall both “accept the Christian religion”; and then ‘shall Israel be the third.’ Even “the Tyreans” [cf. the Lebanese] shall become “converted to the true God,” and “distribute” all “their goods and riches” to “mitigate the needs of poor Christians.... The Gentiles...shall turn unto the Lord and live according to His Laws and Commandments” when “the Church of the Lord...will be gathered everywhere” among “the various nations to which the Gospel would be preached.”

Christ will “conquer” the World “by the preaching of the Holy Gospel” -- and cause “all peoples and nations to rejoice.... All nations shall know and profess God.... “Christ preaches His

vocation to all nations” as “Saviour of the entire World.... **The Christian Church** will therefore not decrease but **will much more be increased**.... The believers shall gloriously increase” and become “a large multitude of believing children...extended throughout the entire World.”

“A large number of people that would come to Christ from all areas of the World.... The multitudes of those that dwell at the sea” will ‘be converted.’ For “all nations shall surrender in obedience to the Holy Gospel.” Christians “will convert the unbelieving **Heathen** to God” and shall “extend themselves among all the Gentiles and cause the Church of Christ gathered from all the Gentiles to grow and increase in true righteousness” until “**everyone** will have to praise her.... The Gentiles shall come to the Church of Christ in great multitudes.”⁴⁶⁹

“Ezekiel 40 depicts “the incomprehensible blessedness of the Church Militant. It depicts “the **expansion** of the New Testament Church...gathered throughout the entire World.” It is “**unconquerable**”; and even “**Christian rulers and governments**” would arise to promote “the exercise of the true religion” and “implement and maintain law and righteousness.”

In Ezekiel 47 and 48, the Gospel River gushes out of the Christian Church, predicting “**the progress and continuing growth** of the revelation of the Holy Gospel.” And the forest of many trees on either side of the Gospel River “depicts the multitude of the elect” who would “grow everywhere.” The ‘fish’ in that Gospel River represent “the multitude of the elect who would most certainly be converted” from “all nations without distinction” in that “expansion of the Kingdom of Christ to the very ends of the Earth” and “from the four corners of the World.”⁴⁷⁰

In Daniel the Messianic Stone in Nebuchadnezzar’s dream,”after destroying the image” depicting the successive Pagan World Empires, expands itself “throughout and over the entire surface of the Earth” and “means **the extension of Christ’s Kingdom all over the World.**” Ultimately, Christ would “give His Own a blessed outcome” throughout “the whole World -- after the Gospel would be preached to every creature, Mark 16:15.” For then,”Christ shall rule in the hearts of the godly among all nations.... The entire human race shall be brought true spiritual redemption through Christ the Prince.... His voice...converts many people” and “has **power over all nations.**”⁴⁷¹

In Hosea, the **Israelites’** long-lasting state of misery would “be **followed by their final conversion to Christ**” and “glorious fruits” of and for “the entire body of Christ” after “Israel’s conversion to Christ.” Then “He will also conquer...and triumphantly exhibit His wrath and **victory.**”

In Joel, “prophecies as regards the blessed condition of the Church” apply to “all kinds of nations” unto salvation, “whether Jews or Gentiles.” In Obadiah “the Church, through the power of her Head Jesus Christ, shall consume all her enemies” – for “**the Lord Christ...was appointed...everlasting King of His Church and of the whole World.**” And in Micah, Christ’s “honour and glory shall grow and be expanded,” and “He shall demonstrate His greatness and glory unto the uttermost ends of the Earth.”

In Zephaniah, there would be an “expansion of the Church” until “**every nation**” worships God “in her own land” -- “all the heathen nations, whosoever and wheresoever they may be.... God’s Church shall henceforth be spread throughout the entire World.... This means: **You, O**

Moors [in Morocco]...too, shall be brought to Christ” -- even the Muslim Moors! Furthermore: **‘from beyond the rivers of Ethiopia, My suppliants...shall bring My offering.’** “For God’s Church shall henceforth be spread **throughout** the entire **World.**” Indeed, **‘I will make you a name and a praise among all people of the Earth.’** Because, **“the Church would be extended** throughout the **entire World.**”

In Haggai, God promises to ‘shake all nations’ – viz. “when His Apostles go and preach...throughout the entire World.” For Christ is “the ‘Desire of all nations’ -- “Whom all Gentiles or nations would desire to embrace.”

Zechariah “predicts the destruction of the enemies of the people of God” and “the conversion of the Gentiles.... God would gather [them] from all the corners of the World.” God would gather His “people and bring them together, through the preaching of the Gospel, from all the ends and areas of the entire World” and in “great heaps.”

Indeed, “the dominion of Christ would spread itself out over the entire face of the Earth” until even “the **Assyrians** and **Egyptians** together with other Gentile nations...shall subject themselves to the sceptre...of Christ..... For the nations previously unclean, shall then be pure and holy before the Lord.”

Malachi has “prophesied...that Christ...would plant and establish the True Religion throughout the entire World.” He “prophesies the right service of God which believers from all the nations would perform for Him in the New Testament... Throughout the World...people will honour and call upon God... This was fulfilled in Christ’s time, and is further being fulfilled thereafter.... He still daily overcomes and restricts the enemies of His Church – until He will finally make all of them into a footstool for His feet.”⁴⁷²

In the Gospels, Christ ‘sends forth judgment to victory’ – “until He obtains the upper hand.” His parables of the mustard seed and the leaven, mean His Kingdom will “widely extend itself and impregnate the entire World.” The parable of the seed cast into the ground shows “the continual progress of the preaching of the Gospel.”

Luke predicts “the rapid expansion of the Gospel throughout the entire World.” And in Luke’s Acts, Christ is “the promised Messiah and Saviour of the World.” Indeed, not just Christ but also His Apostles were ‘to be a Light of the Gentiles...for salvation unto the ends of the Earth.’⁴⁷³

In Romans, “**after** the conversion of the Gentiles the Jews too shall be converted.” For there shall yet be ‘the receiving back’ of the Jews “into the Church of Christ, when **the Jews shall turn to Christ as a great multitude....** The Jews or the Jewish Nation” shall be “regenerated unto the Church of God.... Later, they shall repent as a great multitude.... ‘**The fullness of the Gentiles**’ means “the full number.” Here -- to ‘come in’ means to become part of the Church “by professing the Christian Faith, in the Church of God.... “**When** the fullness of the Gentiles **shall have come** in..., a very great multitude equivalent to the entire Jewish nation” shall be saved or “powerfully called **through the preaching of the Gospel.**”⁴⁷⁴

Christ must keep on reigning as King and thus “fulfil His royal office” till the Father has finished

putting all things under Christ's feet and "shall once and for all have conquered and destroyed" them. Consequently, we must abound "with a serious zeal and diligence, **always progressing and increasing**...in the work that the Lord...**commands** us to **do**" and knowing we shall "not be without fruit and merciful **reward**."

God 'keeps on filling **all things in all people**' – and "not only to rule them but to protect and to give them spiritual life and movement." Paul wished 'to make **all** men see what is the fellowship...which from the beginning of the World has been hidden in God.' Here, 'all men' means "**all nations**, both Gentiles and Jews, **and all that pertains to them**" – which implies "the subjection of **all** creatures under Christ as the Lord of lords and King of kings...of **all nations and peoples**."

In "Second Corinthians 3:15-16 and other places...**the future conversion of the nation of the Jews to Christ is predicted**." Indeed, in Second Thessalonians two "the Apostle declares that **the coming of Christ in judgment will not** take place as **soon** as some were attempting to make them believe. For **the falling away** and the **antichrist** first had to come.... **The real antichrist**" 'is enthroned in the temple of God' which "**cannot be understood of the temple of Jerusalem**...."

"By this is to be understood **the Church of God**, which the antichrist will either invade or oppose, and which he will oppress with His dominion" when "the Roman Empire...was much broken and subjugated by the Saracens and **Muhammadans in the East** and by various **barbarian nations in the West...about six hundred years after the birth of Christ**." Yet "**Christ in His Own time shall gradually consume even the antichrist and deprive him of his stature in Christendom...by the pure preaching of the holy Gospel through which the Spirit of the Lord works powerfully in the hearts of men**." Thus, one should pray that 'the Word of the Lord may have free course and be glorified' -- meaning: "May it speedily and **successfully** be **spread** and promoted...and bring forth worthy **fruits!**"⁴⁷⁵

The Epistle to the Hebrews explains predictions about "the advent of Christ and **the calling of the Gentiles**...especially by the **powerful preaching** of the Gospel and the sending forth of the Holy Spirit **throughout the entire Earth**. Thereby, spiritual religion is **everywhere** erected."

First John 2:2 states Christ atoned even "**for all people in the entire World** from all **nations** who would **yet believe** in Him" as the Saviour "of the elect believers in the **whole World**." Indeed, the same John states in the Book of Revelation that Christ 'the Lion of the tribe of Judah' goes forth in His "**conquering power over the Devil and the World**." Through "the pure preaching of the Gospel..., Christ...the King of kings...spreads **this Gospel throughout the entire World** with the power of His Spirit.... And **through His servants**, He overcomes all opposition in such a way that...He maintains the upper hand throughout" – in spite of "the rise not only of the **Muhammadans** in the **East** but especially of the **Romish Antichrist** in the **West**."

In Revelation 9:1, John saw "saw **a star fall**" and being "given **the key of the bottomless pit**." "Some understand this star to refer to **Muhammad and his followers**.... With his **Arabs and Saracens** who looked like armed locusts he spread...throughout a large part of the World."

At Revelation 9:14, “**almost all expositors** understand the sect of the **Muhammadans**” and specifically the “four nations” of “the **Arabs, the Saracens, the Tartars, and the Turks.** From the year 620 onward, the **Arabs and the Saracens** inflicted much violence against the Christians, and especially against the Roman Empire in the East.... When the **Antichrist** was at his zenith, and when orthodox Christians were being oppressed to the greatest extent, the **Tartars** and the **Turks** broke through... They overran and **subjugated** a large part of **Asia** and **Africa.** And they destroyed the Greek or the Eastern Empire of which Constantinople was the capital.”

In the West, “the kings...gave their power to the beast.” Yet godly “Pastors were at that time able to erect new churches in various countries. Indeed, they did so without being able to be annihilated by the persecutions of the **Antichrist.** This is what happened in France and England and Bohemia and Switzerland and other areas -- through **Waldo, Wycliffe, Purvey, John Huss, Jerome of Prague** and still more others.”

At the Pre-Reformation, God opened His ‘little book’ – “the Book of the Gospel. When the **Antichrist** was at its zenith, it was a closed book as far as the Church was concerned. But from the time that the **Turks** broke forth against Christianity..., this Book [or **Biblion**] was once again more and more opened up to the Church.”

Ultimately,” the house of **Jacob will be converted** to the Lord -- and the entire **Church of Christ, consisting of both Jews and Gentiles,** will triumph over her enemies even in this present World.... Christ will appear **only after** that, in order to pronounce His judgment over all flesh.” Meanwhile, Revelation 10:11 is “a prediction...for the Pastors...gradually to bring the Gospel out of the oppression and darkness of the **Antichrist** and into the clear light of day.”

Revelation 11:1f is about “the re-erection of the ruined [True] Religion in the [true] Church of Christ.” This takes place “**after** this [True Religion] has been trampled under foot by the tyranny of the **Antichrist**.... It was predicted that the previously-dilapidated **Church** would be re-erected and re-constructed by Christ in greater measure **throughout the entire World.**”

In Revelation 11:2f, “the entire time of the domination of the **Antichrist** is to be understood.... The time must necessarily be understood in a prophetic manner, and figuratively – namely of ‘days’ meaning entire years, as in Ezekiel 4:5 and Daniel 9:24. And these [1260] years some begin to count from the year 606 A.D., when the Bishop of Rome for the first time accepted the title of the Bishop [or Pope] of the entire Christian Church (that belongs to Christ alone).... “Witnesses to the truth and in refutation of the domain of **Antichrist**...were **Waldo** and **Peter de Bruys** in France, **Wycliffe** and **Purvey** in England, **John Huss** and **Jerome of Prague** in Bohemia and in Germany.... And at length it pleased God to raise up **Luther** and **Melanchthon** in Germany, **Zwingli** and **Oecolampadius** in Switzerland, **Farel** and **Calvin** in France, and others in their own places. All these finished their witness with greater power, causing a large part of the great Babylon to fall -- whose complete fall and destruction is predicted hereafter.”

At Revelation 11:13, “a large part of the **Romish and Antichristian domain** falls away from the **Antichrist**.... A large part of the nations which stood under **Antichrist’s domination** would fall away from him.... As prefigured here, they would more and more become converted -- until the final fall of ‘the great city’ with the seven hills and its **false-prophet** would follow.”

In the replay of history from Revelation 12:1 onward, one sees “what gradually caused the **Antichrist** to hatch -- which finally emerged in about the year 606 A.D.... The **Antichrist** in the West and the **Muhammadans** in the East obtained the upper hand and oppressed the [True] Church of Christ throughout the entire World.” Yet, at 12:14f, “the Jews themselves shall become converted before the end of the World and gathered into the true Church of Christ (Romans 11:25 and Second Corinthians 3:14 *etc.*).”

At Revelation 13:1, “**the Antichrist** finally brought forth his kingdom. For Emperor Justinian repelled and subjugated those barbaric nations in about 550 A.D., when he again began to exalt the Bishop of Rome. Indeed, the cruel Emperor Phocas declared him the General Bishop in about 606.

“Revelation 13:1’s first beast is best applied to the Neo-Roman tyranny. That was erected in that city at about the time the Holy City [alias the True Christian Church] began to be trodden down and the True Church of Christ began to flee into the desert. This Neo-Roman tyranny spread out over the whole of Christendom, especially in the West.”

Though ‘wounded to death’ at Revelation 13:3, “this wound was fully healed by **Pepin** and by **Charlemagne**, who during the eighth and ninth centuries entrenched the Bishop of Rome in his full powers when the ten kings who rose up with him yielded their power to him.”

This first beast then ‘**opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme His Name and His tabernacle.**’ Revelation 13:6. “Some understand this [tabernacle] to refer to **the True Church of God** which he declares to be heretical and **excommunicated**, and which he slanders in front of all the World. Others understand this to refer to ‘the body of Christ’ which is called the tabernacle of His divinity...and which is blasphemously mistreated by the Mass. **Both of these interpretations are true.**”

The second beast at Revelation 13:11 “means the **Antichrist**... He would behave in his external appearance and in his profession **as if he were the representative of Christ** the Lamb of God and a servant of all of Christ’s servants.”

His ‘mark’ at Revelation 13:17 is that of “**the Latin or Romish Church**, which conducts its **principal religious services in Latin**.... Hence the name **Romish or Latin** expresses this **number** of her **name**.... Irenaeus...applies it to the word *Lateinos*, in which the number ‘666’ is found.”

At Revelation 14:6, one sees “the faithful witnesses of Christ and Preachers of the Gospel who, when **Antichrist** was at his height, began publicly to warn the World against it and openly to extend the Gospel of Christ throughout Christendom. Similarly, in about 1170 A.D., the **Waldensians**...arose in France -- whom **Antichrist** opposed with great power.”

Revelation 14:8 could well “refer to the rise of **John Wycliffe** and his men in England, and **John Huss** and **Jerome of Prague** in Germany and Bohemia... For in about 1380 and 1400 A.D., their teachings and writings began to inflict much destruction on the New Babylon.” And Revelation 14:9-10 “represents the time of the full **Reformation** of Christianity begun in the year

1517 A.D. by **Luther** and **Zwingli** and their supporters.”

In Revelation 14:13, especially “from the time of the **Reformation** onward there would be a renewal of the preaching of this everlasting Gospel.” Revelation 15:1-4 “refers to the elect of [all] the **nations**” who would fear and glorify the King of nations. That would be accomplished after the pouring out of God’s seven last plagues, Revelation 16:2-11f.

This was (and is) being accomplished progressively “when the Empire of **Antichrist** began to suffer demolition through the renewal of the preaching of the everlasting Gospel in various places in Europe by **John Wycliffe** and **John Huss** and **Jerome of Prague** and their peers.” For “after the times of **Luther**, whole surrounding provinces and kingdoms and nations fell away from the **Antichrist**”; and “especially after the **Council of Trent**” in A.D. 1545-63.

Thus “the Empire of the **Antichrist** is being broken down and will finally be levelled to the ground.” Later, “**still more will be brought to conversion.**” Indeed, “also **the Jews will receive Christ by heaps.**” Ultimately, “the city of Rome, where the throne of the **Antichrist** is actually located” -- shall have its throne annihilated.

Then “they will chase away the **Antichrist** and his Ecclesiastical Council and his adherents. Thus his Empire will much decline, while his lustre is being eclipsed in the World -- until he will finally be totally annihilated by the Spirit of Christ’s mouth” through the ongoing **preaching** of the **Word of God**.

Revelation 16:12 seems to refer to **Islamic “Turks and Persians.”** It expects that “these nations would still unite with one another” even as “the waters of [the Romish] **Antichrist** have become dried up” and “will make him powerless to continue to maintain himself.”

Indeed, by Revelation 16:19’s fall of ‘the cities of the nations’ -- one is to “understand all other cities outside of Christendom.” Such as those of **the Turks and the Persians and other Heathen.**”

In Revelation 17:1-5, “the **Apostate Church** is...compared to a pretty whore who has left Christ the only Bridegroom and gone off with other men or idols.” This “means the **City of Rome with her dominion....**” Not only the most important Patristic Fathers and all of the Reformed Teachers are agreed on this, but so too are even many of the **papist expositors....**

“The fall of Rome referred to in Revelation 18:2-21 will be the absolute end of that City. Indeed, this is so obvious that even some papal expositors themselves admit that what is predicted here and in the following chapter must be understood about the present City....”

“The external prettiness of this woman or **the apostate Romish Church**, is seen throughout her entire kingdom... Everything is directed toward that which is most precious and most ornamental, and the attire of her chief leaders is purple and scarlet....”

“‘Holy Father’ and ‘The Vicar of Christ’ and ‘The Head of the Universal Church’ and ‘The Successor of Peter’ and ‘The Foundation of the Church’...are horrible blasphemies and superstitions and false-teachings.” Indeed, they are just like the ‘**golden cup in her hand, full**

of abominations and filthiness of her fornications,' Revelation 17:4.

At Revelation 17:10, Constantine from Rome “moved to Byzantium which he renamed Constantinople, after himself. As a result of this, **imperial authority** more and more **diminished** at **Rome and in Italy**. Consequently, **the dominion of the Antichrist** gradually arose **there**. And that is **the eighth form of government** mentioned here.”

Indeed, Revelation 18:2 refers “to the uttermost extermination of the rule of the beast or of this Great Romish Babylon.” And at Revelation 18:12-13, she shall be punished for having “enslaved the bodies of the living and for having sold the souls of the dead by supposedly redeeming them from an imaginary purgatory through pardons and indulgences and pilgrimages and Masses for the dead and suchlike.”

Revelation 19:1-6 occurs “**after** the Romish Babylon has finally been burned and exterminated.... This means that the time now arrives when **He shall have brought all His enemies under our feet** and shall have destroyed the kingdom of **Antichrist**.”

Revelation 19:11 means Christ’s annihilation also of “**all his [Antichrist’s] adherents and all other enemies of the churches....** This would **precede** His final coming, and take place at a time **when the Jews would be converted** and the rest of the Congregations would...triumph over all the Church’s enemies and **enjoy a reign of peace**.”

At Revelation 20, “Christ will **finally** come only in **judgment**.” Meanwhile, it is in “**the power of Christ’s Spirit and Word** by which Satan’s hands and feet are bound so that he cannot injure the elect.”⁴⁷⁶

– **DORDT DUTCH BIBLE**, as authorized by the Synod of Dordt (A.D. 1637)

170) “I am persuaded that Asa acted warrantably in making a law that the People should stand to the Covenant, in receiving into the Covenant such as were not of his kingdom. Second Chronicles 15:9f.... It is Nature’s Law, warranted by the Word, that **Nations should encourage and stir up one another to seek the true God**. It is also prophesied, that divers Nations should excite one another in this way.

“Isaiah 2:3, ‘Many people shall go and say, “Come ye, and let us go up unto the Mountain of the Lord, to the House of the God of Jacob -- and He will teach us His ways!’” Zechariah 8:21f, ‘And the inhabitants of one city shall go to another, saying, “Let us go speedily to pray before the Lord of hosts; I will go also!” Yea, many people, and strong Nations, shall come to seek the Lord of hosts’....

“There is also a **clear prophecy to be accomplished under the New Testament**, Jeremiah 50:4f.... ‘Israel and Judah shall go together, and seek the Lord...saying, “Come and **let us join ourselves to the Lord** in a perpetual Covenant!’”....

“It is also foretold that different Nations shall confederate with the Lord and with one another. Isaiah 19:23-25. ‘In that day there shall be a highway out of Egypt into Assyria; and the Assyrian shall come to Egypt, and the Egyptian into Assyria, and the Egyptians shall serve with the Assyrians’....

“The Church of Scotland had once as much of the presence of Christ as to the power and purity of doctrine...as any we read of since the Lord took His Ancient People to be His Covenanted Church. The Lord stirred up our nobles to attempt a reformation in the last age...and carried on the work gloriously...until the idolatry of Rome and her cursed mass were dashed.... The Protestants in France and Holland and the renowned princes in Germany did carry on the work in an innocent self-defensive war which the Lord did abundantly bless....

“Christ has proved a Rock of offence.... They [His enemies] have been dashed in[to] pieces by the Stone that was cut out of the Mountain without hands, Daniel 2:34f. And the other powers that enter the lists with Him, shall have the same dismal exit. ‘Whosoever shall fall upon this Stone, shall be broken; and [up]on whomsoever It shall fall, It shall grind him to powder’. Matthew 21:44.

“Christ will not so depart from the land, but a remnant shall be saved. And He shall reign, victorious conquering King, to the ends of the Earth. O that there were Nations, kindreds, tongues and all the people of Christ’s habitable World encompassing His Throne [cf. Revelation 15:4] with cries and tears for the Spirit of supplication to be poured down upon the inhabitants of Judah, for that effect!”⁴⁷⁷

“I mean not any such visible reign of Christ on Earth, as the Millenaries [alias the Premillennialists] fancy.... [But] I shall be glad to be a witness, to behold the kingdoms of the World become Christ’s. I could stay out of Heaven for many years to see that victorious triumphing Lord act Who prophesied part of His soul-conquering love in taking into His Kingdom the greater sister, that Kirk of the Jews, which sometime courted our Well-beloved for her little sister (Canticles 8:8); to behold Him set up an ensign and banner of love to the ends of the World....

“The Antichrist and the great red dragon will lop Christ’s branches, and bring His vine to a low stump under the feet of those who carry the mark of the beast. But the Plant of Renown, the Man Whose Name is the Branch, will bud forth again and blossom as the rose. And there shall be fair white flourishes again, with most pleasant fruits, upon that Tree Of Life... In the Name of the Son of God -- believe that buried Scotland, dead and buried with her dear Bridegroom, shall rise the third day again; and there shall be a new growth after the old timber is cut down!...

“The kings of Tarshish [in Psalm 72] and the isles must bring presents to the Lord Jesus! And Britain is one of the chiefest isles. Why, then, but we may believe that our kings of this island shall come in and bring their glory to the New Jerusalem wherein Christ shall dwell in the latter days? It is our part to pray that the kingdoms of this World may become Christ’s!”⁴⁷⁸
Revelation 11:15.

– **SAMUEL RUTHERFORD**, Scottish Professor of St. Andrews (A.D. 1640)

171) To settlers before leaving England for America: “**All the ends of the World – shall remember and turn unto the Lord, and all the kindreds of the nations shall worship before Thee!** A seed shall serve Him; it shall be accounted to the Lord for a generation... They shall come, and shall declare His righteousness unto a people that shall be born, that He hath done this!”⁴⁷⁹

“**Theocracy, or to make the Lord God our Governor...is the best Form of Government in a Christian Commonwealth, and which men that are free to choose (as in new Plantations they are) ought to establish....** The Form of Government which giveth unto Christ His due pre-eminence, is the best Form of Government in a Christian Commonwealth....

“In relation to the Church, it is said: ‘**He hath made all things subject under His feet, and hath given Him over all things to be Head of the Church, [so] that in all things He might have the pre-eminence’....** In Psalm 2:10-12, you have a description of those that are fitted to order Civil affairs in their Magistracy to Christ’s ends.... **The Question** is of [those in] a **Christian Commonwealth** that should **willingly subject** themselves to Christ – **not** of [those in] a **Heathen State** that shall perforce **be** subdued unto Christ!”⁴⁸⁰

“**Now [may] the Father of lights and God of all grace fill our hearts with the life and power of faith and zeal, to pray for, long for, speed, and wait for the most desired ruin and speedy begun-downfall of that most cursed Kingdom of Antichrist,** according to the scope and drift of that Prophecy expressed in the pouring out of these Seven Vials!”⁴⁸¹

“**This casting of Satan in the bottomless pit, was to this end, that he should not deceive the Nations any more.** But a thousand years after Constantine, he deceived the World with more corrupt and Superstitious Religions than before. And even with [Popish] Pagan Religion also.

“The Holy Ghost puts no difference between Popish Paganism and Heathenish Paganism.... **These thousand years therefore do most properly begin – from the [future] destruction of Rome.**”⁴⁸²

– **JOHN COTTON**, Minister and Patriarch of New England (A.D. 1642)

172) “**We all came into these parts of America with one and the same end and aim, namely to advance the Kingdom of our Lord Jesus Christ and to enjoy the liberties of the Gospel in purity with peace....** In our settling (by a wise providence of God) we are further dispersed upon the sea-coasts and rivers than was at first intended....

“We therefore do conceive it our bounden duty, without delay to enter into a present Co[n]sociation [or Confederacy] amongst ourselves for mutual help and strength in all our future concernment. [So] That, as in nation and religion, so in other respects, we be and continue one.”⁴⁸³

– **NEW ENGLAND CONFEDERATION**, first American Interstate Confederation (1643)

173) “Upon which (testimony of Mr. Luther), that notable Reformation of the Church which we see, hath followed. Men not now singlely as came to pass at the voice of the foregoing Angel, but by whole Provinces and Tribes at once, [are] **everywhere** shaking off the yoke of the Beast for the vindication and reformation of Religion.”⁴⁸⁴

– **JOSEPH MEDE**, English Professor of Theology at Cambridge (A.D. 1643)

174) “Darkness covered the earth and gross darkness the people. The Lord hath risen upon us, and His glory hath been seen upon us...not only in respect of the great Reformation wrought in this Western part of the World a hundred years ago and more -- God awaking as it were out of a sleep, and like a giant refreshed...and stirring up His strength for the raising up of Jacob and restoring the desolations of Israel and blasting him [the Antichrist] with the breath of His mouth.”⁴⁸⁵

– **WILLIAM TWISSE**, Moderator of the Westminster General Assembly (A.D. 1643)

175) “Let thy prayers walk over the vast ocean, and bring matter for thy devotions like the merchant’s ship her freight from afar! Visit the Churches of Christ abroad – yea, the poor Indians and other ruins of mankind that lie where Adam’s sin threw them with us, without any attempt made as yet upon them by the Gospel for their recovery! And carry their deplored condition before the Lord!

“Our [Sir Francis] Drake is famous for compassing the Earth with his ship in a few years. Thou mayest by thy prayers [do so] every day – and make a **more gainful** voyage of it too than he did.”⁴⁸⁶

– **WILLIAM GURNALL**, English Minister of Lavenham (A.D. 1644)

176) “This great and warlike Nation [of Christian England] instructed and inured to the fervent and continual practice of Truth and Righteousness, and casting far from her the rags of her old vices, may press on hard to that high and happy emulation – to be found the soberest, wisest and most Christian People at that day when Thou the Eternal and shortly-expected King shall open the clouds to judge the several kingdoms of the World, and distribute National Honours and Rewards to Religious and just Commonwealths.”⁴⁸⁷

– JOHN MILTON, greatest Christian poet of all England (A.D. 1644)

177) “We are thinking of a new work over sea, if this Church were settled. The times of Antichrist’s fall are approaching. **The very outward providence of God seems to be disposing France, Spain, Italy and Germany for the receiving of the Gospel.** When the curtains of the Lord’s tabernacle are thus far, and much farther enlarged by the means which yet appear not – how our mouth be filled with laughter, our tongue with praise, and our heart with rejoicing!”⁴⁸⁸

– JOHN BAILLEE, Professor of Divinity in Glasgow and Westminster Divine (A.D. 1644)

178) “There may be some prayers which you must be content never yourselves to see answered in this World, the accomplishment of them not falling out in your time. Such as those you haply make for the calling of the Jews, **the utter downfall of God’s enemies, the flourishing of the Gospel....** All which prayers are not yet lost, but will have answers...and therefore may take place in after ages.”

“[The whole plot of the book of Revelation] is but the story of Christ’s conquering for His Kingdom with His bow and with His arrows [*i.e.* the Word of God], and executing the decrees that were contained in the roll He took out of His Father’s hand.... After all the Kingdoms of the World have had their time and their date, by which the Saints have all along been oppressed and injured, there is, even on Earth, a Kingdom to be given unto them when all Nations shall be converted unto God, and the Saints in them be the prevailing party in this World.

“There be many prophecies and promises in Scripture that are not yet fulfilled, under the fulfilling whereof will bring the Church into a more glorious condition than ever it was yet in the World. There is a glorious time a-coming.... There are such Scriptures, wherein are such glorious things promised to be fulfilled in the Church as never yet were fulfilled.”⁴⁸⁹

– THOMAS GOODWIN, President of Oxford’s Magdala College (A.D. 1644)

179) Regarding the Stone Kingdom that is to fill the Earth (Daniel 2:35), Rome is the stumbling block to that fulfilment. When removed, however, “then shall that be fulfilled, that **all the kingdoms of the Earth shall be[come] the kingdoms of the Lord Christ.**”⁴⁹⁰

– **PETER BULKELEY**, American Minister of New Hampshire (A.D. 1646)

180) “The [Pope is the] pretended Vicar of Christ on Earth, who sits as God over the Temple of God, exalting himself not only above all that is called God but over the souls and consciences of all his vassals – yea, over the Spirit and Christ; over the Holy Scriptures; yea, and God Himself. Daniel 8 & 11 chapters, and Revelation 15, together with Second Thessalonians 2.... Yet doth he upon the point challenge the Monarchical or Absolute Power also, being full of self-exalting and blaspheming, Daniel 7:25 & 11:36 & Revelation 13:6 – speaking blasphemies against the God of Heaven, thinking to change times and Laws. But he is the son of perdition arising out of the bottomless pit, and comes to destruction. Revelation 17. For so hath the Lord Jesus decreed to consume him by the breath of His Mouth. Second Thessalonians 2.... The fullness of the Gentiles is not yet come, and probably shall not – until the downfall of the Papacy.”⁴⁹¹

– **ROGER WILLIAMS**, first American Baptist (A.D. 1647)

181) We now come to the *Westminster Standards* -- as the last great statements of Biblical truth from the Protestant and Calvinistic perspective. They were endorsed by the famous commissioners to the Westminster Assembly, which included such theological giants as: Baillie, Burgess, Burroughs, Byfield, Calamy, Chambers, Cheynel, Coleman, Gattaker, Gillespie, Gipps, Gouge, Henderson, Herle, Hoyle, Jackson, Lightfoot, Marshall, Reynolds, Rutherford, Seaman, Spurstow, Staunton, Temple, Twisse, Wilkinson – and many others.

According to the Westminster Assembly’s *Westminster Confession of Faith*:⁴⁹² “After God had made all other creatures, He created man, male and female, with reasonable and immortal souls, **endued** with knowledge, **righteousness** and true holiness, after His Own image; **having the Law of God written in their hearts**, and **power to fulfil it**.... Beside this Law written in their hearts, they received a command...which while they kept [it] **they were happy** in their communion with God, and had **dominion** over the creatures.”⁴⁹²

“As the providence of God doth, in general, reach to **all** creatures, so, after a most special matter, it taketh care of His Church and disposeth **all** things to the **good** thereof.”⁴⁹³ “The first covenant made with man [Hosea 6:7] was a covenant of works, wherein **life was promised to Adam and in him to his posterity**, upon condition of perfect and personal **obedience**.... Christ...is held forth in **more** fullness, evidence, and spiritual efficacy, to **all nations**, both Jews and **Gentiles**.... [Yet] there are not therefore two covenants of grace, differing in substance, but

one and the same, under various dispensations.”⁴⁹⁴

“To all those for whom Christ hath purchased redemption, He doth certainly and effectually apply and communicate the same...; overcoming all their enemies by His almighty power and wisdom in such manner and ways as are most consonant to His wonderful and unsearchable dispensation.”⁴⁹⁵

“God gave to Adam a Law, as a covenant of works, by which He bound him and all his posterity to personal, entire, exact, and perpetual obedience, promised life upon the fulfilling, and threatened death upon the breach of it... This Law, after his fall, continued to be a perfect rule of righteousness; and, as such, was delivered by God upon Mount Sinai in Ten Commandments.... The Moral Law doth for ever bind all, as well justified persons as others, to the obedience thereof... Neither doth Christ in the Gospel any way dissolve, but much strengthen this obligation..., the Spirit of Christ subduing and enabling the will of man to do that freely and cheerfully which the will of God revealed in the Law requireth to be done.”⁴⁹⁶

“God, the supreme Lord and King of all the World, hath ordained the Civil Magistrates to be under Him over the people for His Own glory and the publick good...[and] hath armed them with the power of the sword for the defence and encouragement of those that are good and for the punishment of evil-doers.... The civil magistrate...hath authority and it is his duty to take order...that all blasphemies and heresies be suppressed.... It is the duty of people to pray for magistrates.... Much less hath the Pope any power or jurisdiction.... Second Thessalonians 2:4; Revelation 13:15-17.”⁴⁹⁷

“The purest churches under heaven are subject both to mixture and error, and some have so degenerated as to become synagogues of Satan. Revelation 18:2; Romans 11:18-22.... The Pope of Rome...is that Antichrist...that exalteth himself in the Church against Christ and all that is called God. Matthew 23:8-10; Second Thessalonians 2:3-4,8-9; Revelation 13:6.”⁴⁹⁸

“The popish sacrifice of the ‘Mass’ -- as they call it -- is most abominably injurious to Christ’s one only sacrifice, the alone propitiation for all the sins of the elect. Hebrews 7:23-27; 10:11-18.... The doctrine which maintains a change of the substance of bread and wine into the substance of Christ’s body and blood (commonly called ‘transubstantiation’) by consecration of a priest or by any other way -- is repugnant not to Scripture alone but even to common sense and reason; overthroweth the nature of the Sacrament; and hath been and [still] is the cause of manifold superstitions, yea, of gross idolatries. Acts 3:21; First Corinthians 11:24-26; Luke 24:6,39.”⁴⁹⁹

– WESTMINSTER CONFESSION, Chief Standard of British Calvinists (A.D. 1647)

182) “It was requisite that the Mediator should be God, [so] that: He might sustain and keep the human nature from sinking...; purchase a peculiar people, give His Spirit to them; conquer their enemies.... The Mediator should be man, [so] that He might advance our [human] nature.... Christ executeth the office of a King in calling...a people to Himself...and giving

them...**Laws**...by which He visibly governs them; in rewarding their obedience...and preserving and supporting them...and...**overcoming all their enemies**.... Christ was exalted in His ascension, in that...giving them commission to preach the Gospel to all nations..., He, **in our nature** and as our Head, **triumphing over enemies**, visibly went up **into the highest heavens**”⁵⁰⁰

In the *Lord’s Prayer*, the phrase ‘The Kingdom come!’ is a petition “that the kingdom of sin and **Satan may be destroyed**, the **Gospel propagated throughout the World**, the **Jews called**, the **fullness of the Gentiles brought in**” -- and that **the Church** be “furnished with all Gospel-Officers and ordinances; **purged from corruption**; [and be] countenanced and **maintained by the Civil Magistrate**.” Further, “we pray that **God would so over-rule the World and all in it**...[so] that our sanctification and salvation may be perfected [and] **Satan trodden [down] under our feet**. Romans 16:20.”⁵⁰¹

– **WESTMINSTER LARGER CATECHISM**, Biggest Standard of Calvinists (A.D. 1648)

183) That is to be brought about also through earnest preaching and praying. Consequently, in the *Calvin-istic Public Prayer Before the Sermon* in the *Westminster Assembly’s Directory for the Publick Worship of God*, “the Minister who is to **preach**, is to endeavour to get his own and his hearers’ hearts rightly to be affected.”

No wonder, then, that the 1645 *Westminster Directory for the Publick Worship of God* urges every Minister before delivering his sermon to stir up the Members of the Church! For he is to get them “to **pray** for the **propagation of the Gospel and Kingdom of Christ to all nations**; for the **conversion of the Jews**, the **fullness of the Gentiles**, the **fall of Antichrist**, and the hastening of the second coming of our Lord; for **the deliverance of the distressed churches abroad from the tyranny of the antichristian faction and from the cruel oppressions and blasphemies of the Turk [alias Islam]**; for the **blessing of God upon the Reformed Churches**...and for our **plantations** in the remote parts of the World.”

Likewise, public prayer is to be made also “for the **universities** and all **schools** and **religious seminaries**...that they may **flourish more and more in learning and piety**”; and “that God would **pour out a blessing** upon the **Ministry of the Word**” and “**upon the civil government**.” This is to be done “with **confidence** of His mercy...and the acceptance of our persons through the merits and mediation of our High Priest **the Lord Jesus**.”⁵⁰²

– **WESTMINSTER DIRECTORY FOR PUBLICK WORSHIP OF GOD** (A.D. 1645-48f)

184) “‘This is the Covenant which I have made with you,’ saith the Eternal; ‘forget it not! Neither yet fear ye other gods; but **fear you the Lord your God**, and He shall deliver you from the hands of all your enemies!’

“To this same Law...and Covenant are **the Gentiles no less bound** than sometime were the Jews

-- whensoever God doth illuminate the eyes of any multitude, province, people or city and puts the sword in their own hand to remove such enormities from amongst them, as before God they know to be abominable. Then, I say, are they no less bound to purge their dominions, cities, and countries from idolatry than were the Israelites, what time they received the possession of the land of Canaan.”⁵⁰³

“If apostates are to be stoned and killed according to that Law [Deuteronomy 13:6-9], then surely seducing heretics are also to receive their measure and proportion of punishment. The moral equity of the Law requires this much at least, that if we compare heresy and apostasy together, look how much less the evil of sin is in heresy -- so much and no more is to be remitted of the evil of punishment, especially the danger of contagion and seduction being as much as rather more in heresy than in apostasy; yes, that which is called heresy being oftentimes a real following after other gods....

“Though we have clear and full Scriptures in the New Testament for abolishing the ceremonial law, yet we nowhere read in all the New Testament of the abolishing of the judicial law -- so far as it did concern the punishing of sins against the Moral Law.... He who will hold that the Christian Magistrate is not bound to inflict such punishments for such sins, is bound to prove that those former laws of God are abolished, and to show some Scripture for it.

“That judicial law for having two or three witnesses in judgment (Deuteronomy 19:15 *cf.* Hebrews 10:28), is transferred even with an obligation to us Christians -- and it concerns all judgment, as well ecclesiastical as civil (Matthew 18:16 *cf.* Second Corinthians 13:1).... Other judicial or forensical laws concerning the punishments of sins against the Moral Law may -- yea, must -- be allowed of in Christian Republics and Kingdoms.”⁵⁰⁴

– GEORGE GILLESPIE, Scottish Commissioner at Westminster Assembly (A.D. 1648)

185) “The Church will triumph over all her enemies. Her warfare will endure “till towards the end of the first 6000 years of the World.”

Then, “another condition” will prevail which “may well be stiled triumphant and glorious.” Christ will establish dominion over land and sea (Revelation 20:5-6), giving His “Kingdom and dominion...unto the saints of the most High.”⁵⁰⁵

– WILLIAM STRONG, British Puritan Theologian (A.D. 1648)

186) “The utmost ends of the Earth are designed and promised to be, in time, the possessions of Christ.... The little we see, is something in hand to earnest [or guarantee] to us those things

which are in **hope**; something in possession, to assure us of the rest in promise when the ends of the Earth shall see His glory, and the 'kingdoms of the World shall become the kingdoms of the Lord and His Christ, when He shall have dominion from sea to sea, and they that dwell in the wilderness shall bow before Him.' Psalm 22:37; Revelation 11:15; Psalm 72:8-11.

“And if the [present] **dawn** of the morning be so delightful – what will the [future] clear **day** be? If the **first fruits** be so precious – what will the the **whole harvest** be? If some **beginnings** be so full of joy – what will it be when God shall **perform** His **whole work**, when the whole ‘**Earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord**, as the waters cover the sea (Isaiah 11:9-10)’ – and East and West shall sing together the song of the Lamb?!”⁵⁰⁶

– **THOMAS SHEPARD**, American Missionary to the Massachusetts Indians (A.D. 1648)

187) “God hath set a signal mark of His presence upon your (New England) Assembly, in strengthening your hands to redeem and preserve the civil rights of the common weal[th].... Doubtless may it be a comfortable support...in any future difficulties to contemplate that as the Lord offered you (in this design) a happy opportunity to **enlarge** and **advance** the **territories** of **His Son’s Kingdom**, so He has not denied you (as I am confident He will not) a heart to improve the same.... And in as much as lies in you to make **all** the **nations** of the **Earth** the **kingdoms** of the **Lord** and of His Christ – so your honours may still preserve your interest in His favour.”⁵⁰⁷

– **EDWARD WINSLOW**, American Pilgrim Leader (A.D. 1649)

188) “May we live in good association with her [South Africa]...and in time employ some of her children as servants and helpers and **train them** in the **Christian Religion** whereby if it pleases Almighty God to bless these good matters...many souls may be brought to the Reformed **Christian Religion** and to God! As such, may the building of the proposed fort and garden [at the Cape of Good Hope] not only redound to the advantage and profit of the Honourable [Dutch East India] Company, but also for the **preservation** and **salvation** of **many** human lives, which is **the most important aspect** in the magnification of God’s most holy Name and the propagation of His holy Gospel, whereby your Honourable activities throughout India [alias Indonesia] will **undoubtedly** more and **more** be **blessed**.”⁵⁰⁸

– **JANSZEN & PROOT**, Remonstrance for the Colonizing of South Africa (A.D. 1650)

189) “That God in His appointed time will bring forth the Kingdom of the Lord Christ unto **more glory** and power than in former days, I presume you are persuaded. Whatever will be more, these six things are clearly promised:

1. Fullness of peace unto the Gospel and the professors thereof. Isaiah 11:6-7; 54:13; 33:20-21; Revelation 21:15.
2. Purity and beauty of ordinances and Gospel worship. Revelation 11:2; 21:3.... The tabernacle...wholly...by appointment. Malachi [1:11 *cf.*] 3:3-4; Zechariah 14:16; Revelation 21:27; Zechariah 14:20; Isaiah 35:8.
3. **Multitudes** of converts, **many** persons, yea, **nations**. Isaiah 60:7-8 & 66:8 & 49:18-22 and Revelation 7:9.
4. The full casting out and rejection of all will-worship and their attendant abominations. [Colossians 2:16-23;] Revelation 11:2.
5. Professed subjection of the nations throughout the **whole** World **unto** the Lord **Christ**. Daniel 2:44; 7:26-27; Isaiah 60:6-9. The kingdoms become the kingdoms of our Lord and His Christ. Revelation 11:15....
6. A most glorious and dreadful breaking of all that rise in opposition unto Him, Isaiah 60:12. Never such desolations, Revelation 16:17-19.”⁵⁰⁹

Paul makes an important prediction explicitly of the Israelites and implicitly of the Gentiles in Second Corinthians 3:12-16. There, he says that we Christians “have such **hope**” that “the veil **shall** be taken away” from their hearts which are presently shrouded.

Owen observes that “the veil is taken off from the face of Moses.... The removal and destruction of this double veil by the Spirit and grace of the Gospel, is that which is **prophesied** of, Isaiah 25:7, ‘**He will destroy** in this mountain...the covering covered’ or the double veil ‘that is on the face of all people and...**the veil veiled over all nations**.’”⁵¹⁰

“Though our persons fall, our cause shall be as truly, certainly, and infallibly **victorious** – as that Christ sits at the right hand of God. The Gospel shall be victorious! This greatly comforts and refreshes me!”⁵¹¹

– **JOHN OWEN**, English Congregationalist of Christ Church, Oxford (A.D. 1651)

190) “The Scripture speaks of a **double conversion** of the **Gentiles**. The first: **before** the conversion of the Jews – they [the Gentiles] being branches wild by nature **grafted into** the **True Olive Tree** instead [or in the place of] the natural branches [alias the Jews] which are broken off.

“**This** ‘fullness of the Gentiles’ shall come in **before** the conversion of the Jews. And till then, ‘blindness’ hath happened unto Israel. Romans 11:25. The **second** [conversion of the Gentiles takes place] **after** the conversion of the Jews.”⁵¹²

– **GOUGE, CALAMY, ASHE, OWEN & GOODWIN**, and other Puritans (A.D. 1652)

191) Psalm 67:2 is “an earnest prayer for the **enlargement** of the Church, to the joy of **all nations** and the **increase** of God’s blessings.” Everyone who prays for the coming of the Lord’s Kingdom by reciting this prayer, should support missionary work. “God, in His Own due time, will undoubtedly cause the fullness of the Gentiles to come in....”

“Christ is going out to the ends of the Earth as a Light to the Gentiles. Isaiah 49:6. His riding forth on a red horse to destroy His enemies, is impressive. But His riding forth on a white horse to **convert the Heathen**, is still more impressive. Revelation 6:2-4.

“This work is that of enlarging Christ’s Kingdom, fulfilling the promises made by the Father to the Son that **all kingdoms of the Earth will yet be His.** This work propagates Christ’s Gospel as the lifted sceptre which draws the nations to their King.”⁵¹³

– **HENRY WHITFIELD**, American Preacher and Missionary (A.D. 1652)

192) “O merciful gracious God and heavenly Father! As it has pleased Thy Divine Majesty...to call us here at the Cape of Good Hope...to gather with our own Council in Thy Holy Name, may we...make such decisions as **maintain justice** and (if it be possible) **to implant and expand Thy True Reformed Christian Religion** in Thy good time among these wild and brutal natives to the praise and honour of Thy Name.... This we pray and desire in the Name of Thy dear Son our Mediator and Saviour Jesus Christ.”⁵¹⁴

– **JOHAN VAN RIEBEECK**, first Governor of the Cape in South Africa (A.D. 1652)
[Prayer used for opening all Council Meetings at the Cape of Good Hope]

193) “To the Reader.... In these times, the prophecies of Antichrist [and] his downfall are accomplishing.... The Gospel shall spread over all the Earth, even to all the ends of the Earth. And from the rising to the setting Sun – all nations shall become the nations and kingdoms of the Lord and of His Christ. Such words of prophecy hath the Spirit used to stir up...a mighty Spirit of prayer and **an expectation of faith for the conversion** both of the **Jews** (yea all Israel) **and of the Gentiles also, all over the World.**”⁵¹⁵

“Dedicated to Oliver Cromwell to overthrow Antichrist, and to accomplish in part the prophecies and promises of the Church’s deliverance from that bondage.... First, to overthrow Antichrist by the wars of the Lamb; and secondly, to raise up His Own Kingdom in the room [or place] of all early powers which He [Christ] doth cast down -- and **to bring all the World [to be] subject to be ruled in all things by the Word of His Mouth....** In these times, the prophecies of Antichrist [and] his downfall are accomplishing.”⁵¹⁶

“Here be greater motions about the Indians than ever were, since I began to teach them. I never

found such violent opposition by Satan. And yet the Lord doth outwork him in all. And the Kingdom of Christ doth spread and rise the more by his so violent opposition.”⁵¹⁷

“The Government of the Lord Jesus...by the Word of His Mouth written in the Holy Scriptures, shall order all affairs among men. And great shall be His Dominion..., all men submitting to be ruled by the Word – in civil as well as Church affairs.”

Cromwell is urged to put “government into the hands of **saints**” by “implementing **Scriptural government and laws**.” For “the Lord’s time is come to advance and spread His blessed Kingdom which shall (in His season) fill all the Earth...over all the nations of the Earth in His due time.” For “the **Gospel shall spread over all the Earth**, even to all the ends of the Earth. And from the rising to the setting sun, all nations shall become the nations and kingdoms of the Lord and of His Christ.”⁵¹⁸

– **JOHN ELIOT**, Founder of Society for Propagation of Gospel Among Indians (1653)

194) “The amplitude and **large extent of the Kingdom of Jesus Christ upon Earth**, when ‘the Heathen shall be His inheritance and the uttermost parts of the Earth His possession and when all kings shall fall down unto Him and all nations do Him service, all contrary kingdoms and powers being broken in pieces and destroyed’ – is a thing plainly and plentifully foretold and promised in the Holy Scriptures.... The Kingdom of the Lord Jesus...is now beginning to be set up where it never was before.”

God will not fail to complete the work begun. Romans 11 teaches God’s mercy to the Gentiles “shall in time provoke the Jews” to jealousy and conversion. “The time is coming, when things shall not thus continue (the way they are at the present), but be greatly changed and altered.”⁵¹⁹

– **RICHARD MATHER**, Preacher and Husband of John Cotton’s Widow (A.D. 1653)

195) “1. Christ’s Name, fame, and honour shall be perpetuated from one generation to another for the running of His benefits to His subjects and for the course of His judgments on His enemies. His Name shall endure for ever; His Name shall be continued as long as the sun.

2. His Gospel shall spread further and further among men, to deliver His Own from the curse..., to make them partakers of the blessing of full felicity. Men shall be blessed in Him.

3. It shall be in vain to seek blessedness anywhere, except in Him only Who is the Procurer, Applier, and Maintainer of true blessedness. The way whereunto, is to come to God in and through Christ. In Him men shall be blessed. And

4. Such a fullness of converted Gentiles at length shall be brought in, that the blessedness of the Gospel of Christ and of spiritual communion with Him and the riches of His goodness and grace shall generally be acknowledged in all the World. All nations shall call Him blessed.”⁵²⁰

– **DAVID DICKSON**, Scottish Theology Professor at Glasgow (A.D. 1654)

196) “We must turn the more ardently to those [the Jews] from whom sprang the fathers, the old covenants, the glory, and Christ concerning the flesh [Romans 9:4-5]. Since we know that about them promises have been made with regard to their liberation and **conversion to God and Christ in the future** [Romans 11:11-26]. The more these times are approaching – let us the more fervently hope for this!”⁵²¹

– **JOHANNES HOORNBEEK**, Dutch Theology Professor at Utrecht (A.D. 1655)

197) “It is the ardent prayer of all that love the Lord Jesus in sincerity: that His Kingdom may be enlarged and the glorious light of the Gospel may shine forth into all nations as such; that all the ends of the World may see the salvation of our God; that the Stone cut out without hands may become so great a mountain as to fill the Earth; that ‘the idols may be utterly abolished’ [*cf.* Isaiah 2:18] and ‘the gods of the Earth famished’ [*cf.* Zephaniah 2:11]; and that all the isles of the Heathen may worship the only true God.”⁵²²

-- **EDWARD REYNOLDS**, American Preach and Missionary (A.D. 1655)

198) “Here is comfort to expect the glory of the Church. ‘The Highest Himself shall establish her.’ ‘The mountain of the Lord’s house shall be lifted up on the tops of the mountains.’ Isaiah 2:2.

“In the last days, it shall be more glorious than any mountain dignified by God.... Abraham’s conquests of the four kings, Genesis 14, seems to be a figure of the Church’s victories, when the captive lots should be rescued and Sodom itself should be something better for Sion.

“Then shall Christ meet her as King of Salem, King of Peace, with the blessing of the most high God. Then shall He, as He did at the feast in Cana, turn the Church’s water into wine. ‘Idols shall be utterly abolished.’ Isaiah 2:18. Dross and mixtures in doctrine and worship purged out. ‘The river of the water of life shall be as clear as crystal, proceeding from the throne of God and of the Lamb.’ Rev. 22:1. ‘The everlasting Gospel preached,’ Revelation 14:6 – called ‘everlasting’ because it shall nevermore be clouded and obscured by the foolish inventions of men.

“Now the Church never yet found such a state suitable to these promises and predictions.

Some great thing remains to be accomplished which the World hath not yet seen nor the Church experienced. But that Truth that will not lie, that truth which cannot lie, has assured it. ‘The mystery of God shall be finished.’ Revelation 10:7.

“The Church hath hitherto been gasping in the fire and in the water. She has lived, but as wrapped in a winding-sheet. The saints under the altar have cried a long time for the vengeance of the temple to recompense their blood.

“There is a time when this Lazarus that hath lain begging at the door of the rich and mighty, shall be mounted up to a better state. **Sion shall enjoy a resurrection, and fling off all badges of a funeral.** For ‘**the Highest Himself shall establish her.**’⁵²³

-- **STEPHEN CHARNOCK**, English Theologian and Proctor at Oxford (A.D. 1655)

199) “Religion was first hatched in families.... A family is the **seminary** of Church and State.... The presage of their future, lives to be thence taken. Proverbs 20:11. By family discipline, officers are trained up for the Church. First Timothy 3:4.... It is noted, Acts 21:5, that the disciples brought Paul on his way with their wives and children. Their children probably are mentioned -- to intimate that they parents would by their own example and affectionate farewell to Paul, breed them up in a way of reverence and respect to the Pastors of the Church....

“How careful should Ministers and parents be, to train up young ones whilst they are yet pliable..., and betimes to instil the principles of our most holy faith -- as they are drawn into a short sum[mary] in *Catechisms*, and so altogether laid in the view of conscience!... I had, upon entreaty -- resolved to recommend to them with the greatest earnestness, the work of catechising.... Families are societies that must be sanctified to God, as well as Churches....

“Would parents but begin betimes, and labour to affect the hearts of their children with the great matters of everlasting life -- what happy well-ordered Churches might we have!... We should entreat all Christian families to take more pains in this necessary work -- and to get better acquainted with the substance of Christianity.... I know not what work should be fitter for their use, than that computed by the Assembly at Westminster.... I do therefore desire that all masters of families would first study well this work themselves -- and then **teach it their children and servants**.... First, **let them read and learn the [Westminster] Shorter Catechism**; and **next, the [Westminster] Larger [Catechism]** -- and lastly, read the **[Westminster] Confession of Faith!**⁵²⁴ “The **beginning** and **progress**” of ‘**that day**’ [in Zechariah 14:6] -- the Church’s ‘**latter day**’ -- “for **a long while**” would ‘not be clear’ but “**dubious.**” But at the “**close** of it, it is said ‘in the **evening** it shall be **light**’ -- that is, **peaceably glorious**.... ‘The Lord shall be King’ [14:9].... Men shall more distinctly ‘hold to the Head’ (Colossians 2:18).... ‘Every tongue and language call Him “Lord”’ [Philippians 2:10ff]....

“‘The Lord shall be **King**...over all the **Earth**’ [Zechariah 14:9a] -- **not only** over a **few Churches**, but **over all Nations**...as ‘**King of Nations.**’ Jeremiah 10:9 [cf. Revelation 15:4 & 21:24]....

“**This** ‘day’...cannot be taken properly as if all these things could be transacted in the space of twenty-four hours.... This text is exactly parallel to those promises that are everywhere in Scripture said to be fulfilled in the latter days -- and speak of so much glory and sweetness as then shall be exhibited and dispensed to the World....

“There shall be **one** Lord” -- Zechariah 14:9b, *cf.* Ephesians 4:5ff. “Hitherto, there have been divers lords. The Heathens had their several Deities; the Turks [or Muslims], their Mahomet; the Jews, their imaginary Messiah; the Papists, their lord the Pope.

“Many Nations do **not as yet** call Christ Lord.... But **then** [in ‘that day’], Jesus Christ...shall be acknowledged **alone**; He shall be acknowledged as **Lord**....

“God will usher in the glorious and everlasting estate by some **preparative degrees**. The latter times are more blessed times; ‘former things are to be done away,’ Revelation [20:2-6 & chapter] 21.... There are promises of special unity and sweet accord in the latter days -- of one Lord and one King; of one Shepherd....

“God will make Jew and Gentile and all that fear Him, to lie down together in peace and safety -- and to be all called by one Name [John 10:14-16].... We do so often hear of the misery...and yet again of the blessedness of the latter times: hard times, and happy times -- miserable in the beginning, **happy in the end and issue**” or **outcome!**⁵²⁵

-- **THOMAS MANTON**, *Westminster Standards’* Chaplain to Cromwell (A.D. 1657)

200) “We freely give up our lives and estates unto our Lord King Jesus and to His people, to become soldiers of the Lamb’s Army – abhorring mercenary principles and interests. And for this work’s sake, we desire not to love our lives unto death. Neither will we ever (if we speak so great a word with reverence in the fear of God), sheathe our swords again – until Mount Zion [alias the Christian Church] becomes the **joy of the whole Earth.**”⁵²⁶

-- **FIFTH MONARCHY MEN**: *Official Declaration* in England (A.D. 1657)

201) “That which the vision [of Ezekiel chapters 40f] doth chiefly hold out unto us, is the building of the Christian Temple [or Church] with the worship thereof – under Jewish expressions. Which began to be accomplished in the Apostles’ days. Acts 15:16....

“There is one thing more also intended – viz., the restoring of the Christian Church after its apostasy and suffering in spiritual Babylon under Antichrist [First John 2:18 & Second Thessalonians 2:3-8 & Revelation chapters 13 to 18]. Many are the breaches, rents and ruins of

the Christian Church to this day – and we may see the Tabernacle of Christ is fallen [Revelation chapter 11].

“But it is expected that He ‘Whose appearance was like the appearance of brass, with a measuring line in His hand,’ Ezekiel 40:3, should come and raise it up and build the ruins thereof, bringing in the fullness of Jew and Gentile. That so the state of the Church may answer those prophecies made of it. Isaiah 60:17-18 & Ezekiel 45:8 [& Romans 11:11-32].

“There shall be no violence, no oppression by princes or others. Hitherto there hath been little else but oppression, in all lands.... The New Heaven and the New Earth wherein dwells righteousness, have not yet been created – but are to be expected as things intended in this vision.”⁵²⁷

– WILLIAM GREENHILL, English Minister of Stepney (A.D. 1657)

202) “The great sensible and visible happiness of the Church on Earth before the Ultimate Day of Judgment, is prophesied in the Word of God.” Compare: Psalms 2 & 72; Isaiah 2 & 11 & 65 & 66; and Zechariah 9:9 and 14:1-21. The last days may be said to be both glorious and perilous in different respects. 1. They may be said to be glorious in respect of the great light, liberty, knowledge, company, commentaries, encouragements, clearer manifestations of the Gospel, and many other glorious privileges which former ages never enjoyed. 2. Yet they will be perilous times in respect of the sad abuse of those glorious privileges and sinning against such great light and love. John 3:19.

“The higher we are lifted up with privilege, the greater will our fall be if we abuse them. Matthew 12:2-3. We cannot sin at so cheap a rate in these last times, as formerly men did. The sinners of the last times, will have the lowest place in hell.”⁵²⁸

– THOMAS HALL, English Minister of King’s Norton (A.D. 1658)

203) The last great British Creed or Confession, is the 1658 *Savoy Declaration* -- owned and practised in the Congregational churches in England. It was prepared by such profound Puritans as Bridge, Caryl, Goodwin, Howe, Greenhill, Manton, Nye, and the unexcellible Dr. John Owen.

States this illustrious *Savoy Declaration*:⁵²⁹ “That consolatory Maxim of the Apostle, ‘God shall tread down Satan under your feet shortly’ [cf. Romans 16:20], which Paul uttereth concerning the Church of Rome, shows how both God and Satan have this very hand therein.... Unto this catholic visible Church, Christ hath given the ministry, oracles and ordinances of God for the gathering and perfecting of the saints....

“The purest churches under Heaven are subject both to mixture and error, and some have so degenerated as to become **synagogues of Satan....** **The Pope of Rome...is that Antichrist...that exalteth himself in the Church against Christ and all that is called God, whom the Lord shall destroy....**

“The Lord is in care and love toward His Church.... According to His promise, we expect that in the latter days -- Antichrist being destroyed, the Jews called and the adversaries of the Kingdom of His dear Son broken -- the churches of Christ, being enlarged and edified through a free and plentiful communication of light and grace, shall enjoy in this World a more quiet...and glorious condition than they have enjoyed” till now.

– **THE SAVOY DECLARATION** of the English Independents (A.D. 1658)
[authorized by OLIVER CROMWELL and drawn up by the godly Puritans
GOODWIN, NYE, OWEN, GREENHILL, HOWE, and one hundred others]

204) “**Antichrist shall be destroyed at the end of the 1260 years....** The interval between that event and ‘that most blessed millennium of the septenary age’ will perhaps embrace the **destruction of the Turkish Empire, the conversion of the Jews, and the fullness of the Gentiles.**”⁵³⁰

– **SAMUEL LEE**, American Minister of Bristol in Rhode Island (A.D. 1659)

205) “To those Christian *virtuosi* that are afraid to quit this World chiefly because they fear to lose the delightful philosophical knowledge they have of it, it may be represented...that...**all our faculties will, in the future blessed state, be enlarged and heightened,** So will our knowledge also be of all things that will continue [to be] worth it, and can contribute to our happiness in the new state.”⁵³¹

– **ROBERT BOYLE**, renowned English Christian Natural Scientist (A.D. 1660)

206) “Now, Christians, the more great and glorious things you expect from God (as the downfall of antichrist, the conversion of the Jews, the conquest of the nations to Christ...and a more general union among all saints) -- the more...eminently holy in all your ways and actings, it becomes [or behooves] you to be.”⁵³²

“There will come a time when, in this World, holiness shall be more general and more eminent than ever it hath been since Adam fell in paradise.”⁵³³

– **THOMAS BROOKS**, English Puritan Minister of St. Margaret’s (A.D. 1662)

207) “The ruin of Antichrist is near. And nothing can retard it – but the sinfulness, hypocrisy, and factiousness (if I may so speak) of the Reformed Churches.... Christ will procure for all those that are His faithful and obedient followers, the Spirit of Truth and Righteousness – and imbue them with the divine Life.... It shall so at length come to pass – that Justice, Peace and Equity shall more universally and fully flourish in the World than ever yet they have done.... Faith in God and in the Life to come, shall be more vigorously sealed upon the hearts of men.”⁵³⁴

– **HENRY MORE**, English Prebendary of Gloucester Cathedral (A.D. 1665)

208) “If the slinging away of the Jews and casting them out of the Church be the reconciling of the World -- that is, be the occasion whereby the Gospel should be preached to the Gentile World [so] that thereby they [**the Gentiles**] might be reconciled unto God – what shall the receiving [back] of them [the Jews] be, but life from the dead? Will there not be joyful days thro’[ughout] the World, and among the Gentiles -- when they [**the Jews**] shall be received [back] into favour again? Will it not be like the resurrection from the dead, when Jew and Gentile shall both enjoy the same felicity and happiness?!”⁵³⁵

-- **JOHN BROWN**, Presbyterian Minister at Wamphrey in Scotland (A.D. 1666)

209) “Let the whole of Israel be saved! And may, one day, **life** come from the dead – [so] that the **Turks** (or **Muhammadans**) and **other Gentiles** may notice and fear, and the multitude of the elect may turn to Thee and live!”⁵³⁶

– **ANDREAS ESSENIUS**, Dutch Professor at Utrecht (A.D. 1667)

210) “We cannot be thankful enough for the great blessings which God has bestowed upon us through the work of the Reformation, in having Himself opened the doors of the Roman-Babylonian captivity and led us out into the glorious freedom. However, as the Jews should not have been satisfied with leaving Babel but were commanded to build the House of the Lord and to establish His services – in like manner we should never be contented with having left Babel, but should carefully correct all still existing shortcomings.”⁵³⁷

– **PHILIPP JAKOB SPENER**, German Founder of Lutheran Pietism (A.D. 1670)

211) “Thus the Jews and the Gentiles shall meet together in the Spirit of the Gospel, and so both become a righteous nation. To both of which the gates of the city shall stand continually open so [that] they may with boldness enter.... The gates, by their thus looking every way (*cf.* Revelation chapter 21), do signify to us that from what quarter or part of the World soever men come for life – for those men, there are the gates of life even right before their doors.... No man needs at all to go about, to come to life and peace and rest. Let him come directly from sin to grace; from Satan to Jesus Christ; and from this World to the New Jerusalem!”⁵³⁸

“The town of Mansoul [alias the City of Mankind] did also now [after Revelation’s nineteenth chapter] more thoroughly seek the destruction and ruin of all remaining Diabolonians [or Followers of the Devil] that abode in the walls.... When the town of Mansoul had thus far rid themselves of their enemies and of the troublers of their peace, in the next place a strict commandment was given out that yet my Lord Will-be-will should, with Diligence his man, search for and do his best to apprehend what...Diabolonians were yet left in Mansoul....

“Some few more of the subtlest of the Diabolonian tribe did yet remain in Mansoul.... But they kept them[selves] to their dens and holes. If one of them did appear or happened to be seen in any of the streets of the town of Mansoul, the whole town would be up in arms after them....

“And now did Mansoul arrive to some good degree of peace and quiet.... Also, she was **busy** in her **manufacture**....

“Remember, therefore, O My Mansoul, that thou art beloved by Me! As I have, therefore, taught thee to watch, to fight, to pray, and to make war against My foes – so I now command thee to believe that My love is constant to thee. O My Mansoul, how have I set My heart, My love, upon thee! Watch! Behold, I lay none other burden upon thee – than what thou hast already. Hold fast, till I come!”⁵³⁹

“The day will come that the Church of God shall have no more Antichrist, Babylon, or the Mother of Harlots – than only the remembrance of her.... In those happy days, they shall see Antichrist only in its ruins....

“There will be a strange alteration, when Antichrist is dead.... The Church shall be bold in the profession of their King and their God. Yea, it shall be their glory to be godly. And carnal men shall praise them for it. The praise of the whole Earth shall the Church of God be, in those days.”⁵⁴⁰

– **JOHN BUNYAN**, Puritan Author of the famous book *Pilgrim’s Progress* (A.D. 1660)

212) “Peace will come. The Jews will be converted. Babel, that is, the Roman Church, will perish. And the Kingdom of Christ will appear in which all the nations will serve Him and in which the Gospel will be preached throughout the whole World. And that all this will come about suddenly at precisely the time when the self-confidence of the antichrist power shall have reached its highest point – though we know not when this will be....

“The Reformation was the beginning of the downfall of the power of Antichrist.... On the sounding of the seventh trumpet, the Kingdom of God would reveal itself and would receive shape in history. That would be the time of the conversion of the nations and the salvation of Israel – the time of the proclamation of the ‘Everlasting Gospel’ all over the World.”⁵⁴¹

-- JOHAN COCCEIUS, German Professor of Theology in Bremen (A.D. 1673)

213) “Our Saviour’s words are a promise to the Father [about] what He will do in aftertimes for His people. Saith He: ‘I will declare Thy Name’ to them.... It is our duty to believe the promise, so to expect the good things promised.... [We should] be continually in a waiting frame, looking and hearkening after the accomplishment of this excellent work of His, spying if we can see the daybreak and the Father’s Name shine forth to other nations who never had a glimpse of it by any Gospel revelation. Till in the end, ‘from the rising of the sun unto the going down of the same His Name [shall] be great among the Gentiles’ -- according to that prophecy relating to these latter times and ages of the World. Malachi 1:11.”⁵⁴²

-- GEORGE NEWTON, English Minister of Taunton (A.D. 1675)

214) “There have been great and glorious days of the Gospel in this land. But they have been small in comparison of what shall be.”⁵⁴³

“Lord, I die in the faith that Thou wilt not leave Scotland.... Thou wilt make the blood of the witnesses the seed of Thy Church, and return and be glorious in the land again.”⁵⁴⁴

-- JAMES RENWICK, Scottish Calvinist Martyr (A.D. 1677)

215) “There is to be a state of very great prosperity for a considerable tract of time, appointed for the Church of God on Earth.”⁵⁴⁵ “Think how it will be if such Scriptures [as Ezekiel 39:29] ever come to have a fuller accomplishment than they have yet had – when in all the parts of the Christian World, kings shall be nursing fathers; queens, nursing mothers; when the Church shall

suck the breasts of kings; when **the glory of the Gentiles** shall by them be brought **into** it!

“How much will it make for the **prosperity of religion everywhere** in the **World**, when it shall become in all places the proper characteristics of princes that they scatter the wicked with their eyes – that they are just, ruling in the fear of the Lord, and are upon the people as showers upon the mown grass and as clear shinings after rain, [when they] are men of courage, men fearing God and hating covetousness!

“Think whether this will not do much to the making of a happy state and to the interest of religion in the [whole] World, when they shall **universally concur**, or very generally, in the practical acknowledgment **that Christ is King of kings** and Lord of lords -- willingly resigning, as it were, their sceptres; or hold them only in a direct and designed subordination and subserviency to Him and His sceptre!”⁵⁴⁶

-- **JOHN HOWE**, Former Chaplain to Oliver Cromwell (A.D. 1678)

216) “The Church of Christ is to be[come] so exalted, that its Members shall be made to **ride upon the high places of the Earth**. Let **us** [in Scotland] not be judged to be of the opinion of **some** men in England...who [premillennialistically] say that, before the great day, Christ shall come in person from Heaven with all the saints and martyrs -- and reign a thousand years on Earth! But **we are of the opinion that the Church shall yet by more high and glorious** – as appears from the book of Revelation – and **the Church shall have more power** than ever she had before....

“Christ’s standard shall **overthrow all the thrones** in Europe that will not ‘kiss the Son’ (Psalm 2:12)... And our Lord shall be exalted **on Earth** – which is **more than in Heaven!** Psalm 46:10.”⁵⁴⁷

– **RICHARD CAMERON**, Scottish Martyr and “Lion of the Covenant” (A.D. 1680)

217) “Whatever may be doubted of their restoration to their land, yet they [**the Jews**] shall be **brought to a visible Church-state**. Not only in particular persons, here and there, in[to] congregations. But the **multitudes**, yea, the **whole body of them** shall be brought, in a **common way with the Gentiles, to profess Christ**. This cannot be denied; as **Romans eleven is clear**. And that will be enough to satisfy us!”⁵⁴⁸

– **JAMES DURHAM**, Scottish Puritan Bible Commentator (A.D. 1680)

218) “Nothing therefore is denoted by ‘the Angel’s having a great chain in His hand’ (Revelation 20:1), but the all-sufficient power of Christ to bridle Satan -- and at His pleasure to keep him in, like a captive whom He not permits to escape or to stir. With this power, if you choose to join the Word and Spirit of Christ by which He works, we willingly agree. And we think this better than introducing here...the whole passion of Christ by which He obtained authority over Satan.”⁵⁴⁹

– JOHANNES Á MARCK, Dutch Professor at Leyden (A.D. 1680)

219) “It is the undoubted duty of all to pray for the coming of Christ’s Kingdom.... All that love our Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity, and know what it is to bow a knee in good earnest, will long and pray for the out-making of the Gospel-promises to His Church in the latter days.... King Christ would go out upon the white horse of the Gospel, conquering and to conquer [Revelation 6 & 19] – and make a conquest of the travail of His soul. [So] that it may be sounded that the kingdoms of the World are become His, and His Name called upon from the rising of the sun [in the East] to its going down [in the West].”⁵⁵⁰

– WALTER SMITH, Scottish Minister and Martyr (A.D. 1681)

220) “When the fullness of the Gentiles is brought in, all Israel shall be saved.... As our Dutch Commentators well observe – not a few but a very great number and in a manner the whole Jewish nation in a full body.... The Scripture must be fulfilled, and the Apostle has justly inferred that in the last time it will perfectly be fulfilled. Romans 11:25-27....

“To this restoration of Israel, shall be joined the riches of the whole Church – and, as it were, life from the dead. Romans 11:12. The Apostle intimates that much greater and more extensive benefits shall redound to the Christian Church from the fullness and restoration of the Jews -- than did, from their fall and diminution, to the Gentiles. Greater, I say, intensively, or with respect to degrees; and larger with respect to extent....

“For there is a certain fullness of the Gentiles to be gathered together by the successive preaching of the Gospel which goes before the restoration of Israel, of which [Romans 11] verse 25 [speaks]. And (there is also yet) another richness of the Gentiles that comes after the recovery of Israel....

“Many nations, which had formerly embraced the Gospel with much zeal -- afterwards almost to be extinguished by the venom of Mahometanism, Popery, Libertinism and Atheism -- would verify his prophecy (John’s, in Revelation 3:1-2). But upon the restoration of the Jews, these [many nations] will suddenly arise as out of the grave.

“A new light will shine upon them, a new zeal be kindled up. The life of Christ [the Lord will] again be manifested in His mystical body [the Church] – more lively, perhaps, and vigorous, than ever....

“An almost innumerable **multitude** of Jews reside in Asia and Africa – among the Persians, Turks, Indians, Chinese, Japanese and Tartars. When, therefore, by the almighty hand of God these [Jews] shall be brought to the communion of the Messiah – their love to Him will be the more ardent as their hatred against Him had formerly been more bitter. And is it not more than probable, that the nations among whom they live – being excited by their example and admonitions – shall come into the fellowship of the same faith? Certainly the words of the Apostle lead us to this.”⁵⁵¹

“What is more evident than that prophecy in Isaiah? The Prophet, in chapter 59:20-21, having foretold the restoration of Israel, according to the Apostle’s commentary, immediately in chapter 60:1 exclaims: ‘Arise, shine, for your light has come; and the glory of Jehovah has risen upon you!’ And in verse 3: ‘and the Gentiles shall come to your light, and kings to the brightness of your rising’ etc. Moreover, the riches of the Church, at that time, are described in verse 17. Instead of or ‘for brass, I will bring gold; and [instead of or] for iron, I will bring silver; and [instead of or] for wood, [I will bring] brass; and [instead of or] for stone, [I will bring] iron.’ The most magnificent words to the same purpose, follow these.

“From the consideration of this, Peter Martyr [Vermigli] has said ‘that indeed, according to almost all the Prophets, especially Isaiah, the happiness of the Church will be great.’ This [happiness] it [the Church] has not yet attained to. But it is probable that it will then [on the conversion of the Jews] attain to it.”⁵⁵²

At a **later** stage, according to Revelation 20:1-6, an even greater state of blessedness is yet to be expected. “The erection of the thrones, here relates to the Church subsisting on Earth.... Believers, at least without molestation or impediment from civil rulers, and even with their countenance and support -- **shall** hold their assemblies for preaching and hearing the Word of God; for governing the Church by the power of the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven; and for condemnation and **triumphing** over pernicious heresies.

“The persons who sit on these thrones, therefore, are not men long since departed; but **saints alive** at the **period** here described [compare *Westminster Larger Catechism* 191].... Owing to the communion of the Church Militant with the Church Triumphant, every **accession** that is made to **the Kingdom of Christ** either **on Earth** or in Heaven, proves [to be] an accession to the Kingdom of the saints in Heaven [Hebrews 12:22-23]. Thus far we have no mention of the resurrection of bodies -- or indeed of any resurrection at all....

“‘Those’ (observe it is **not** the **souls** of those but the **persons themselves**) ‘who had not worshipped the beast nor his image’ etc. -- that is, ‘those’ who adhering steadfastly to Christ -- determined to have no fellowship with the kingdom of Antichrist. These also ‘lived,’ enjoying a blessed peace of conscience, and a **rich abundance** of spiritual consolation -- ‘and reigned with Christ’; **victorious over Satan and the World**, and partaking of the Redeemer’s glorious grace.

“They thus lived and reigned with Christ ‘**a thousand years.**’ Not that their lives as individuals extended to a thousand years; for this never was, and never will be the lot of any mortal. But men of that description reigned **during many successive ages**, till the appointed period. And if you strongly urge their ‘living again’ -- this may be affirmed of these also. For they lived again. Inasmuch as -- under the tyranny of the Beast -- that description of men had lately been harassed, oppressed, reduced to a small number, and involved in such difficulties and privations that they scarcely lived or discovered any principle of vitality at all. But **now**, the face of affairs being changed, their **numbers** are **increased**....

“‘The rest of the dead lived not again.’ ‘The rest’ are those who received not the testimony of Jesus, and [who] worshipped the Beast -- that is, those who persisted in their infidelity or instead of sound doctrine embraced the errors of the ‘**Antichristian Church**’.... These ‘lived not again’: they did not become partakers of spiritual life, nor had they any part in the felicity of that blessed state to which the **true Church** of Christ is **advanced** at **that** period....

“The resurrection in this World, is spiritual; and consists in the **glorious enlargement** of the Church by the **successful preaching of the Gospel** and the renovating **energy of the Holy Spirit**.... It includes the first promulgation of the Gospel of the Kingdom among Jews and Gentiles, accompanied by the conversion of multitudes; the public renunciation of Heathenism in the Roman Empire, under Constantine; and **the Reformation** of the Church by the **exposure** of the **Antichristian system**. To **this prophecy of a thousand years**, must **also** be referred all the **favourable** changes which are **yet** to be expected -- at **whatever** seasons the dates of their **commencement** or termination are to be fixed....

“Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection!’ This expression stands opposed to the false glorying of the followers of the Beast who in consequence of the superstitious and idolatrous canonizations of the Pope honour their partisans.... The term ‘life’ does not here signify the bare existence of the person living.... **To live is not merely to exist, but to be happy!**”⁵⁵³

– **HERMAN WITSIUS**, Dutch Professor at Franeker (A.D. 1685)

221) “The Fall of the tenth part of the great City [in Revelation 11], hastens apace with the pouring out of the vial on the Seat of the Beast [in Revelation 16]. This shall be attended [or followed] with the rising of the [two] Witnesses, or the Call of the Jews and a large Accession of Gentiles.”⁵⁵⁴

“Alas, there is a veil of miserable blindness upon their hearts that they [the Jews] cannot, they will not, see the Truth! But, saith the Apostle, ‘this shall be taken away.’ And (saith he) ‘it shall turn.’ Second Corinthians 3:15-16.

“What is this? I answer: ‘It’ there, may [de]note the body of the Jewish nation. Or the words may be read: ‘They shall turn’ (*i.e.*, the blind minds of **the Jews shall turn** ‘unto the **Lord**’”⁵⁵⁵ –

meaning the Lord Jesus Christ.

“For my own part, I do not expect to live to [see] the accomplishment of these things which I have now mentioned.... Nor can I desire [to live to see accomplished] these things which I have now mentioned.... Nor can I desire to continue [living] so long in this sinful World. Nevertheless, I am comforted in seeing [that] **the day is approaching** when the kingdom of **Antichrist** will receive an **happy fatal blow**.... The Holy **Kingdom** of our Lord **Jesus Christ** will **prevail** – and break in[to] pieces all that shall stand in opposition thereunto!”⁵⁵⁶

– **INCREASE MATHER**, American President of Harvard University (A.D. 1685)

222) “**After** the destruction of the city of Rome and the overthrow of Turkish [or Islamic] rule and, in particular, after the glorious conversion of Israel..., [then also] very many of the Gentiles will be converted.... And [in turn] through them, in that time, the whole World will receive the spiritual good.”⁵⁵⁷

– **JACOBUS KOELMAN**, Dutch Embassy Minister in Denmark (A.D. 1689)

223) “No part of my prayers are so deeply serious, as that for the conversion of the infidel and ungodly World.”⁵⁵⁸ “There is to be no physical resurrection of saints or visible appearance of Christ before the millennium.... The Kingdom of God grows by stages. God has not left the conquering of historical and spiritual evil to be accomplished all in a thousand-year-period after Christ’s personal [re-]advent!

“The Saviour’s work is comparable to that of a physician that hath an hospital or infected city to cure. As the latter giveth up that work when it is perfectly finished – so Christ giveth up the Kingdom of Redemption when He had done [meaning **shall have finished doing**] the work.”⁵⁵⁹
First Corinthians 15:22-28.

– **RICHARD BAXTER**, “the chief of English Protestant Schoolmen” (A.D. 1691)

224) “The ‘judgment [or rulership] shall be given to the saints’ (Daniel 7:27)...when it shall come to pass that false religions and superstitions will have been suppressed and the Christian religion will have become paramount in the World.... If we contemplate the most tenuous beginning of Christianity, and the condition of the present time, this promise clearly appears to be incredible and beyond all hope.

“Nevertheless, the saints, taught by the Word of God, foresee this great catastrophic event –

which at length began to develop under Constantine, and which they anticipated in hope, and which they desired to learn about from this great revelation. Whence it thus clearly follows, that the heavenly scene here described -- should be expounded as referring to the state of the Church here on Earth.⁵⁶⁰

– CAMPEGIUS VITRINGA, Dutch Professor at Franeker (A.D. 1695)

225) “God will certainly accomplish and fulfil, in due time, all the great things that He hath purposed and promised concerning His Church and people in the latter days.... Babylon shall fall; the Jews and Gentiles be brought in; the Gospel Kingdom more and more advanced; divisions healed.”⁵⁶¹

– PHILIP HENRY, Welsh Minister in Flintshire (A.D. 1696)

226) “The Great Turk [or Islam], the Oppressor of the Jews and Eastern Christians, seemeth to be at his last prayers.... Considering what is said of the kings of the East, Revelation 16:12, and of the Western kings, Revelation 17:16, we ought to expect and pray for the coming of the time when the kingdoms of this World shall become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ, Revelation 11:15.... The American Continent will partake of the goodness of God in the latter days.”⁵⁶²

– NICHOLAS NOYES, American Minister at Salem Massachusetts (A.D. 1698)

227) “There are many arguments to persuade us that our glorious Lord will have an Holy City in America.... We cannot imagine that the brave countries and gardens which fill the American hemisphere, were made for nothing but a place for dragons.... O New England, there is room to hope that thou shalt belong to the City!”⁵⁶³

“The Church of our Lord Jesus Christ, well compared unto a ship, is now victoriously sailing round the globe after Sir Francis Drake’s renowned ship called The Victory.”⁵⁶⁴ “I am sure New-England has a True Church to people it. For all the serpents, yea, or giants, that formerly molested that religious plantation – found themselves engaged in a fatal enterprise. We have by a true and plain history secured the story of our successes against all the Ogs in this woody country.”⁵⁶⁵

“There is a revolution and a reformation at the very door, which will be vastly more wonderful than any of the deliverances yet seen by the Church of God from the beginning of the World. I do not say that the next year will bring on this happy period. But this I do say – the biggest part

of this assembly may, in the course of nature, live to see it.”⁵⁶⁶

“**Christianity**, whither art thou fled? Return, return, O beautiful daughter of Heaven! **Return**, [so] that we may look upon thee! What shall we then see -- but a vast company of Christian householders, filled with zealous contrivance and agony to see their houses become Christian temples, and a glorious Christ worshipped and obeyed by all their households?!”⁵⁶⁷
“God will not allow America to remain ‘a place for dragons.’ Has it not been promised unto our great Saviour? ‘I will give Thee the uttermost parts of the Earth for Thy possession!’ Psalm 2:8. And ‘all nations whom Thou has made, shall come and worship before Thee, O Lord, and shall glorify Thy Name.’ Psalm 86:9. And has it not been promised? ‘From the rising of the sun even unto the going down of the same [from East to West], My Name shall be great among the Gentiles.’ Malachi 1:11. America is legible in these promises.”⁵⁶⁸

“The World is [in] a little while hence to have a new face upon it. And in that New World, the Lord Jesus Christ shall have as much influence in the hearts and lives of men as now the devil has.”⁵⁶⁹

“This day, from the dust, where I lay prostrate before the Lord, I lifted up my cries...for the **conversion of the Jewish nation.**”⁵⁷⁰ “May sufficient numbers of great, wise, rich, learned, and godly men in the three kingdoms [of England & Ireland & Scotland in Great Britain both insular and overseas] -- procure well-composed societies by whose united counsels the noble design of evangelizing the World may be more effectually carried on!”⁵⁷¹

– **COTTON MATHER**, American Minister in Boston (A.D. 1703)

228) "The Jews and Mohammedans know of Jesus. It is therefore their sin that they do not love Him, that they hate Him and all who are called Christians after His Name.

“The Antichrist, even though he boasts of the Name of Christ, sins in that he and his followers do not love Jesus but persecute Him and His Church and become drunk with the blood of the saints.... Next to **the Reformation**, however, the **Antichrist** has not received a **heavier blow**.... For **thereby**, [even among Romanists] a great multitude is now intermixed with Popery who hate Popery in their heart....

“Through them, more light is kindled among the Papists. They perceive the inferiority and falsehood of their religion, as well as the veracity of the Reformed Religion. They are **capable of turning away from Popery** [cf. Revelation 18:2-4], and **transferring to the Reformed camp** when times change -- **a change which is imminent.**”⁵⁷²

“The Church has passed through three major periods of history since the giving of the Revelation to John. The period of persecutions under the pagan Roman Emperors; the period of Antichrist who seated himself in God’s temple and overflowed everything with his dominating heresies; and the period under the Church’s own government with **the Reformation** [when] the outpouring of

the seven vials of God's wrath on Antichrist has begun for his destruction. When the outpouring and destruction shall have been completed, the thousand years of a **glorious Church on Earth will follow.**"⁵⁷³

"That the power of **Rome is Antichrist**, we have shown...on the basis of a fourfold proof... From his **name Latinos**, equal in numerical value to the number 666 (cf. Revelation 13:18). >From his [**throne** or] seat or chair (cf. Second Thessalonians 2:4). From Rome with her **seven mountains** (Revelation 17:3,9,18). From his **succession and the time of his public appearance** – following upon the rulers of Rome and appearing at the same time with the crowning of the ten horns – that is, kings -- which resulted from the destruction of the [Roman] Empire through which he exercised his power (Daniel 7:7-25)."574

"We can say of the Church -- that in the time of the domination of **Antichrist**, she was 'dead.' Not in herself. For in her there was spiritual life. But with respect to her publicity and glorious appearance in the World, as indeed in that respect the two witnesses of [Revelation] chapter 11:17 are said to be killed.

"The emergence from that state and the glorious appearance of the Church, was a **resurrection** – a 'life from the **dead.**' Romans 11:15.... This, the first death, is the condition under Antichrist and under his enmity. And the **first resurrection is the glorious condition of the Church after the battle of Armageddon and the destruction of Antichrist.**" Revelation chapters 16 to 20.

"It is **not** true that at the **beginning** of the thousand years, Christ shall come personally in His **human nature from Heaven** to rule in the body **visibly** on Earth during the thousand years. Nor will the martyrs rise in a **bodily resurrection at the beginning of the millennium** to live and to rule here on Earth during the thousand years. Nor will the Church during the thousand years consist **solely** of regenerate persons, without any admixture of unconverted people."⁵⁷⁵

"The binding of Satan is not absolute, as if in that period of a thousand years there were to be absolutely no devils any more on the Earth. He shall always go about as a roaring lion, seeking whom he may devour.

"But it has reference to **publicity.** He shall not constitute a public standing **opposition** to the Church as he did first by means of the Pagan Emperors and thereupon by means of the Antichrist."⁵⁷⁶

– **WILLEM Á BRAKEL**, Dutch Reformed Theologian of Rotterdam (A.D. 1705)

229) "The year of the **revival** of primitive Christianity in the power of it, will be 'the **year of the redeemed**' The bounds of the Church will be **enlarged** by the **conversion of Pagan and Mahometan nations to the faith of Christ**, and the spreading of the Gospel in foreign parts....

"But if 'the year of the redeemed' should not come in our days; if the carcasses of this generation

should fall in this wilderness (as justly they may for our unbelief and murmuring) and we should not go over Jordan to see that goodly mountain and Lebanon – yet let it suffice us that those who shall come after us shall enter into that rest. Joseph dies in Egypt, but lays his bones in confidence that God will surely visit Israel....

“When the fullness of the Gentiles shall come in; when the Gospel shall have had its intended success and made its progress in the Gentile World – all Israel shall be saved.... They shall be brought into belief in the Messiah and be incorporated in the Christian Church.”⁵⁷⁷

“Religion shall flourish under Christ’s government [according to Psalm 72:8-11]... Righteousness shall abound and be in reputation; shall command, and be in power.... Christ’s Kingdom shall be extended very far and greatly enlarged, considering: 1, The extent of His territories.... 2, The dignity of His tributaries.”⁵⁷⁸

“Now it is here promised (in Isaiah 2:2-4)...that Christianity shall be openly preached and professed...; that it shall be firmly fixed and rooted...; that it shall not only overcome all opposition, but overtop all competition.... The spiritual worship which it shall introduce, shall put down the idolatries of the Heathen.... Multitudes shall embrace the Christian Faith. They shall flow into it as streams of water – which denotes the abundance of converts that the Gospel should make.”⁵⁷⁹

“[According to Malachi 1:11], instead of His being worshipped and served among the Jews only, a small people in a corner of the World – He will be served and worshipped in all places – ‘from the rising of the sun [in the East] to the going down of the same [in the West].’ In ‘every place,’ in every part of the World, ‘incense [or prayer] shall be offered to His Name.’ Nations shall be disciplined [cf. Matthew 28:19] and shall speak of the wonderful works of God [Acts 2:5-11 cf. Revelation 15:4 & 21:24-27].”⁵⁸⁰

-- MATTHEW HENRY, English Minister and Commentator at Chester (A.D. 1707)

230) “Whatever views this prophecy [Isaiah 60:9] might have of any events peculiar to the Jewish nation, the glorious increase and future fullness of the Christian Church have generally been thought the main intention of it.”⁵⁸¹

– GEORGE STANHOPE, English Dean of Canterbury (A.D. 1714)

231) “How glorious and comfortable a presage of that happy time [of future blessing] would a generous engagement be of this undertaken now!.... May the good God inspire us all with such true Christian zeal and evangelical charity – as may prove effectual to the enlargement of His

Kingdom, [so] ‘that His way may be known upon Earth, His saving health among **all nations!**’⁵⁸²

– **GEORGE ASH**, British Bishop of Glogher (A.D. 1715)

232) “There is a day coming, in which there shall be a national **conversion** of the **Jews** or **Israelites**. The now blinded and rejected Jews shall at length be converted into the Faith of Christ, and join themselves to the Christian Church....

“Have you any love to, or concern for the Christ – for the work of reformation; the reformation of our country; the reformation of the World? Any longing desire for the revival of that work now at a stand[still]; for a flourishing state of the Church that is now under decay? Then pray for the conversion of the Jews!

“Are you longing for a **revival** to the **churches** now lying like dry bones; would you fain have the Spirit of life enter into them? Then **pray** for the **Jews!**.... ‘For if the casting away of them be the reconciling of the World – what shall the receiving [back] of them be, but life from the dead?!’ [Romans 11:15]. That will be a lively time, a time of a great outpouring of the Spirit that will carry **reformation** to a **greater** height than **yet** has been.”⁵⁸³

– **THOMAS BOSTON**, Scottish Minister of Ettrick (A.D. 1716)

233) “Jesus shall reign where’er the sun, doth His successive journey run;
His Kingdom spread from **shore to shore**, till moons shall wax and want no more!
From North to South the princes meet, to pay their homage at His feet;
while **Western Empires** own their Lord, and **savage tribes** attend His Word.”⁵⁸⁴

– **ISAAC WATTS**, London Successor to John Owen (A.D. 1719)

234) “Christ’s Kingdom succeeded the four monarchies of Daniel 2:44, and will eventually fill the **whole Earth** (Matthew 13:31-32). ‘The day of small things’ (Zechariah 4:6-10) or the beginning of the **expansion** of Christ’s Church in America, should not be despised.”⁵⁸⁵

– **EDWARD CHANDLER**, British Preacher, Evangelist, and Missiologist (1719)

235) “The Church will pass through a period of tribulation and oppression by barbarian nations, during which period the Protestant Governments will be still more indifferent to the fate of Zion [alias the Christian Church] than they have been before. But these inimical forces will be defeated....

“The Pope and the Turk [or the Muslim powers], together with the city of Rome, will be destroyed. The Roman Catholics will begin to unite with the True Church [viz. Protestantism]. The Pagans will submit to Messiah’s reign. And finally, all Israel will be saved.”⁵⁸⁶

– FRIEDRICH ADOLPH LAMPE, German Theological Professor in Bremen (1720)

236) “O, that the Lord would **arise** and have mercy upon Zion [alias the Christian Church]; that the time to **favor** it, the set time, may come (Psalm 102); that the **whole Earth** may be filled with the knowledge of the glory of the Lord as the waters cover the sea (Habakkuk 2)!”⁵⁸⁷

– “NEW LONDON” ADAMS, American Revivalist of Connecticut (A.D. 1721)

237) “It is a very desirable thing that the Heathen be brought to the [Christian] Faith.... It was foretold of Christ that ‘**all** nations shall call Him blessed. Psalm 72:7. **God promised** to Him that He ‘would give Him the **Heathen** for His inheritance.’ Psalm 2:8.”⁵⁸⁸

– SOLOMON STODDARD, American Preacher and Edwards’s Grandfather (A.D. 1722)

238) “Former instances of the fulfilment of Scripture have to be taken as **guarantees** that the unfulfilled prophecies **will** also be realized. The **fall of Babylon (or Papal Rome)**; the **conversion of the Jews**; a united and **flourishing Gentile-Jewish Christian Church**; and the **fall of the Turkish [or Islamic] Empire** – all remain to be fulfilled.

“The fall of Antichrist is well advanced. The spread of Reformed Christianity since the Reformation indicates that the **victory** promised to the Church is gradually **being secured**. The **Jews...will be converted**.... The purity of **their** [at that time then Christian] Faith, will even be **emulated** by the **Gentiles**.”⁵⁸⁹

– ROBERT FLEMING SR., British Missionary and Theologian (A.D. 1726)

239) “There will be a **more** peculiar opening of Christ as a Fountain of life, when the Jews shall be called.” Days of spiritual felicity for the Church will follow “her wilderness state” – and will be contemporary with “the calling of the Jews, the fullness of the Gentiles, and the destruction of Antichrist.”⁵⁹⁰

– SAMUEL WILLARD, Colonial North American Preacher (A.D. 1727)

240) “It may be hoped that Christ will be so far from quitting what He hath already got in New-England, that He will sooner enlarge His dominion by bringing on a glorious Reformation in New Spain [alias Central America and South America].... Pray and **labour** that the Gospel may be preached in **all** the World, in this [American] Indian end of it! For till then, Christ Himself tells you, He will not, He cannot come.... Let Protestants now, for shame, arise – and show that they have some breathings of a true apostolical spirit in them!

“The sorrowful decay and languishing of the work in many places, and the little faith that is now to be found in exercise concerning it, are so far from being a ground of discouragement.... It gives us cause to expect that the set time draweth very near for our blessed Lord Jesus Christ to be recognized and crowned King of kings and Lord of lords.

“Justus Heurnius [the great Dutch Reformed Theologian] supposeth that the [American] Churches planted in those regions termed ‘sea’ (in Revelation 10:2), shall excel [the European Churches] in glory as the right foot in common acceptation excels the left....

“Let the transplanted English vine spread further still! Still call it Thine.... So Asia great and Africa and Europe with America, all four in consort joined, shall sing new songs of praise to Christ our King.”⁵⁹¹

– SAMUEL SEWELL, Colonial North American Preacher (A.D. 1727)

241) “We look for the days when the blessed Saviour of men shall be more ‘the Desire of all nations’ (Haggai 2:7) than He yet has been – the days when true converts will increase in number; when the Church will be enlarged....; when Antichrist will fall, and when the Jews and Gentiles will be converted.”⁵⁹²

– SAMUEL COLEMAN, English Puritan Preacher (A.D. 1728)

242) “O, that ‘the Earth may be full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea’; ‘that the kingdoms of the World may become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ’; ‘that He may reign for ever and ever’! Christianity will spread around the globe. The promised enlargement of the Church ‘shall be fully accomplished.’ Hence missions should be supported with prayer.

“In the ‘happy days’ ahead [cf. Daniel 12:13], when Roman Catholic error and denominationalism will be abolished, all Christians will unite in propagating True Christianity among the Gentiles. Reform is needed. And it will enable ‘a holy warmth of sincere piety’ to flourish, which will foster and promote missions.”⁵⁹³

– **ROBERT MILLAR**, Scottish Puritan and Missiologist (A.D. 1731)

243) “The Old and New Testament promises of the coming into the Church of the fullness of the Gentiles (Isaiah 49:6 & 9:9 and Galatians 4:4 and Malachi 1:11 and Luke 2:32 and Psalms 22:27 & 67:5 and Ephesians 3:5f), are all inducements to undertake Christian Missionary Work. After widespread Gentile conversions, the Jews will also acknowledge Christ.

“Yet with such ‘present bad circumstances of the Christian World’ as the spread of infidelity, there can be no sudden and imminent approach of a happy state of the Church. Consequently, we should not be ‘so very sanguine as some among us are in their expectations’ that in three or four years the World will miraculously be converted to Christianity. However, the ultimate fall of Antichrist will overcome Jewish animosity toward Christianity, so that the conversion of the Jews will effect Gentile conversions.”⁵⁹⁴

– **RICHARD SMALLBROOK**, Bishop of Lichfield and Coventry (A.D. 1733)

244) “The increase of Christ’s Kingdom and glory in the World, is absolutely certain and necessary. It must infallibly be! For God hath said it. Jeremiah 23:5 – ‘A King shall reign and prosper in the Earth.’ Psalm 72:8 – ‘He shall have dominion from sea to sea.’ Psalm 132:18 – ‘Upon Himself shall His crown flourish.’

“The Kingdom is not restricted to a period at the end of history -- though it will reach its fullness then, in the increase and spreading of Gospel light through[out] the World, so that the dark places of the Earth shall be enlightened with the knowledge of Christ. And those places which had but twilight discoveries of Him, shall attain to brighter views of His excellency and usefulness, and to a clearer insight into the Gospel mysteries, and the way of salvation through Christ and His righteousness imputed to the sons of Adam...

“Then it is that Christ shall increase, and His Kingdom be enlarged.... ‘The Earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the glory of the Lord as the waters cover the sea’ -- according to the prophecy of Habakkuk [2:14].”⁵⁹⁵

– JOHN WILLISON, Scottish Missionary and Theologian (A.D. 1736)

245) “Happy days of peace and righteousness, of joy and triumph, of external prosperity and internal sanctity! When virtue and innocency shall be on the throne; vice and vicious men out of power and credit – are prophesied of in Scripture, and promised to the Church of God.... [The prophecy in Revelation chapter twenty] seems to suppose such inhabitants of the Earth during the millennium as were the inhabitants of the Earth when the beast was destroyed, or men in the usual state of natural succession – not persons raised out of the grave, or fetched from the separate state of departed souls.... In this happy state, there will be no turbulent unquiet spirits to be managed by the ambitious – and therefore no fear lest any beast [like the Papal Church] should again rise out of the sea.”⁵⁹⁶

– MOSES LOWMAN, English Minister of Surrey (A.D. 1737)

246) “It is evident from the Scripture that there is yet remaining a great advancement of the interest of religion and the Kingdom of Christ in this World.... There should a time come, when all nations throughout the whole habitable World should embrace the True Religion and be brought into the Church of God....

“The whole World should finally be given to Christ as...the King of all nations and the Possessor of Heaven and Earth.... The Father hath constituted His Son as God-man in His Kingdom of grace or mediatorial Kingdom to be the Heir of the World, [so] that He might in this Kingdom have ‘the Heathen for His inheritance and the utmost ends of the Earth for His possession.’ Hebrews 1:2 & 2:8; Psalm 2:6-7....

“God has appointed Christ to be the Heir of the World in His Kingdom of grace, and to possess and reign over all nations through the propagation of His Gospel and the power of His Spirit communicating the blessings of it.... The Stone [in Daniel 2:35-45] waxes great, becomes a great mountain, and fills the whole Earth.... Surely this representation leads us to suppose that this Last Kingdom shall be of much greater extent than any of the preceding....

“Although of one of the former [viz. the Pagan Roman Empire], it was said that it should devour the whole Earth [Daniel 2:39] -- yet we are naturally led both by the much greater emphasis and strength of the expressions as well as by the whole connexion and tenor of the prophecy to understand the universality here expressed [as regards Christ’s ‘Fifth’ Empire] in a much more extensive and absolute sense.... The Gospel is represented as ‘preached unto them that dwell on

the Earth, and to every nation and tongue and kindred and people’ – Revelation 14:6....

“I question whether it be possible to find out a more strong expression to signify an absolute universality of the knowledge of the true religion through[out] the habitable World, than that in Isaiah 11:9 – ‘The Earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord as the waters cover the sea.’ Which is as much as to say – as there is no place in the vast ocean where there is not water, so there shall be no part of the World of mankind where there is not the knowledge of the Lord. As there is no part of the wide bed or cavity possessed by the sea but what is covered with water – so there shall be no part of the habitable World that shall not be covered by the light of the Gospel and possessed by the True Religion....

“God has declared that heathen idolatry and all the worship of false gods shall be wholly abolished in the most universal manner, so that it shall be continued in no place under the Heavens or upon the face of the Earth. Jeremiah 10:11 – ‘The gods that have not made the Heavens and the Earth, even they shall perish from the Earth and from under these Heavens.’ Verse 15 – ‘They are vanity and the work of errors; in the time of their visitation, they shall perish.’ This must be understood as what shall be brought to pass while this Earth and these Heavens remain; *i.e.*, **before** the end of the World. Agreeable to this is Isaiah 54:5 – ‘The God of the whole Earth shall He be called’....

“The Apostle in the eleventh [chapter] of Romans...verse 16 [says] – ‘For if the first-fruit be holy, the lump [remaining] is also holy’.... These things plainly show that the time is coming when the whole World of mankind shall be brought into the Church of Christ; the fullness of both, the whole lump, all the nation of the Jews, and all the World of Gentiles....

“He is now going to that conquest whereby He shall set up a Kingdom in which He shall be King of kings in a far more extensive manner than either Babylonish, Persian, Grecian or Roman monarchs were.... The main fulfilment of these prophecies that speak of the glorious advancement of Christ’s Kingdom on Earth, is still to come.... ‘God’s people should long enjoy the work of their hands’ (Isaiah 65:22). That they should ‘reign with Christ a thousand years’ (Revelation 20)...we must at least understand a very long time.... It is implied in very many of them that when once this day of the Church’s advancement and peace is begun – it shall never end till the World ends.... It should be all one continued day; not day and night.... There should be ‘abundance of peace, so long as the moon endureth’....

“This ‘day’ shall succeed the last of the four monarchies -- even the Roman in its last state wherein it is divided into ten kingdoms; and after the destruction of Antichrist signified by the little horn whose reign is contemporary with the reign of the ten kings. These things are very plain in the 2nd and 7th chapters of Daniel, and also in the Revelation of St. John. And it is also plain by the 9th [and the 11th] chapter of Romans that it shall be after the national conversion of the Jews, which shall be as life from the dead to the Gentiles.... The fullness of both Jews and Gentiles shall be come in, all the nation of the Jews and all other nations shall obtain mercy, and there shall be that general ingathering of the harvest of the whole Earth....

“With what confidence may we go before God and pray for that of which we have so many exceeding precious and glorious promises to plead! The very first promise of God to fallen

man (Genesis 3:15) – He shall bruise your head – is to have its chief fulfilment at that day. And the whole Bible concludes with a promise of the glory of that day....

“The Scripture gives us great reason to think that when once there comes to appear much of a spirit of prayer in the Church of God for this mercy, then it will soon be accomplished.... It is now a time of scarcity of these spiritual waters.... This promise shall be left on record to encourage some future generation of God’s people to pray and cry earnestly for this mercy, to whom He would fulfil the promise....

“At the Reformation – in the days of Luther, Calvin, and others their contemporaries – the threatened destruction of Antichrist, the dreadful enemy that had long oppressed and worn out the saints, was begun.... Then began the vials of God’s wrath to be poured out on the throne of the beast to the great shaking of its foundations and diminution of its extent [Revelation 16:10f]; so that the Pope lost near[ly] half of his former dominions.... After the Reformation, Antichrist should never prevail against the Church of Christ any more as he had done before.... The issue [or outcome] of that great and last battle...is the Church’s triumph over her enemies as being utterly and for ever destroyed....

“There is yet remaining a mighty conflict between the Church and her enemies – the most violent struggle of Satan and his adherents in opposition to true religion and the most general commotion that ever was in the World since the foundation of it to that time.... (I do not deny that the time when...the reign of the beast began, even the time when Pepin confirmed to the Pope his temporal dominion in Italy, was a time of the great increase and advancement of the power of Antichrist in the World.... **The power of Antichrist** and the corruption of the apostate-church rose not at once, but by **several notable steps** and degrees. So it will in the like manner fall)....

“**This antichristian hierarchy and steps and seasons of destruction** to the spiritual Babylon and revival of the True Church, are prophesied of.... Thus it seems to me very probable that it will prove [to be] with respect to the prophecies of the destruction of mystical Babylon.... This Antichristian Hierarchy and Apostate-Church will at last be so destroyed, that there shall be no remainder of it left....

“There will yet remain a papal church and hierarchy in the World – to be wholly extirpated at another period sometime after the great overthrow principally insisted on in the prophecies.... This second destruction of Antichrist, or rather extirpation of his remains together with the complete extirpation of all remains of Mohametanism, Heathenism and Heresy through[out] the World...may for ought I know be...agreeable to the opinion of the Ancient Jews and many Christian Divines who have followed them....

“There is not the least reason to think that all this will be brought to pass as it were at one stroke -- or that from the present lamentable state of things there shall be brought about and completed the destruction of the Church of Rome; the entire extirpation of all infidelity, heresies, superstitions and schisms through[out] all Christendom; the conversion of all the Jews; the full enlightening and conversion of all Mahometan and Heathen nations through[out] the whole Earth; the full settlement of all in the Pure Christian Faith and Order; and all by means of the victory of the Church in one great conflict with her enemies.... Would this [not] contract the

prophetical representation of Ezekiel 47, where the progress of religion is represented by the gradual increase of the waters of the sanctuary[?!]....

“Would it not be a great thing...that religion, in the power and purity of it, should so prevail – as to get so as to gain the conquest over all those many things that stand in opposition to it among Protestants, and gain the upper hand through[out] the Protestant World? And if...it should go on so to prevail – as to get the victory over all the opposition and strength of the kingdom of antichrist so as to gain the ascendancy in that which is now the Popish World? And if...it should prevail and subdue the greater part of the Mahometan World -- and bring in [also] the Jewish nation in all their dispersions?

“And would it not be wonderful if in the next whole century, the whole Heathen World should be enlightened and converted to the Christian Faith throughout all parts of Africa, Asia, America and Terra Australis [meaning Australia/Australasia or Southern Africa or both?] and be thoroughly settled in Christian Faith and Order without any remainders of their old delusions and superstitions; and this attended with an utter extirpation of the remnant of the Church of Rome and all the relics of Mahometanism, Heresy, Schism, and [Anabaptist] Enthusiasm?....

“I have thus distinguished what belongs to a bringing of the World from its present state to the happy state of the Millennium.... It was a wonderful thing when the Christian Religion after Christ’s ascension so prevailed as to get the ascendancy in the Roman Empire in about 300 years. But that was nothing, to this!... The beginning of that glorious work of God Spirit...shall finally bring on the Church’s Latter-Day Glory....

“Isaiah 60:8-9.... ‘Surely the Isles shall wait for Me, and the ships of Tarshish’.... It is to be hoped that before this effect, now probably begun, is at an end -- the Spirit of God will so influence the hearts of the Protestants, that they will be disposed to devote to the service of God the silver and gold they take from their popish enemies and the gains of their trade and navigation both to the East and West Indies, so that ‘their merchandise and hire shall be holiness to the Lord.’”⁵⁹⁷

“There are three Continents of the Earth: the Old Continent [alias the land-mass of Europe-Africa-Asia], America [North-Central-South], and Terra Australis [or Australasia].... The Mediterranean Sea...opens the way from Canaan...straight to Terra Australis the Third Continent” -- which is also located “to the West side of America through...the great South Sea into Terra Australis by the Indian Ocean....

“What advantage has it been to America, that the Mediterranean Sea opens from them to us; or what advantage has Hollandia Nova [alias Australia] or Terra Australis Incognita [alias unknown Australasia], from the Indian Ocean's reaching from them even to this land? Wherefore, we do believe that the most glorious part of the Church will hereafter be there, at the centre of the Kingdom of Christ, communicating influences to all other parts....

“There are these remarkable periods of time: when Abraham was called, in the Year of the World 2000; Solomon's glorious Kingdom settled, and temple finished, in the Year of the World 3000; Christ born in the Year 4000; and the Millennium to begin in the year 6000.” By the latter, as the A.D. 1737 Dr. Jonathan Edwards implies also right here below, he meant: 2000 A.D.

“There must be an amazing and unparalleled progress of the work and manifestation of divine power -- to bring so much to pass, by the year 2000.... In the next whole century, the whole Heathen World should be enlightened and converted to the Christian Faith throughout all parts of Africa, Asia, America and Terra Australis -- and be thoroughly settled in Christian Faith and Order, without any remainders of their old delusions and superstitions.... And all things [need to be] so adjusted and settled through[out] the World – that the World thenceforward should enjoy an holy rest or sabbatism [cf. Genesis 2:3 with Isaiah 66:23f and Hebrews 4:9-11 and Revelation 14:13]....

“I say: that this ‘New World’ should all worship the God of Israel, Whose worship was then [in Isaiah’s time] contained to so narrow a land – is wonderful and glorious! And this I believe to be meant...by ‘the Isles’ in these prophecies.” Isaiah 42:4 cf. 42:10-12 & 42:21 and 49:1-12.

Very significant is Edwards's view of “Isaiah 42:4” -- in which God predicted, around B.C. 740, that **‘the isles shall wait for His Law.’** “This, and such prophecies” of “the gospelizing of” ‘the isles’ alias ‘the islands’ or ‘coastlands’ [cf. too Genesis 9:27 and 10:2-5] -- explains Edwards -- "I believe to have a threefold accomplishment, to each of which the prophecies had an eye.

“By ‘isles’ [or ‘coastlands’] is meant...particularly Europe” and, more especially yet, the British Isles. “The conversion of that, is principally aimed at in these prophecies.... Then, they have a glorious accomplishment in the **gospelizing [of] the isles of Britain and Ireland**, and making of them **so glorious a part of the Church** [cf. Isaiah 49:1-6 & 49:12]....

“But by these glorious times they speak of, is intended **also the times of the Church's triumph at the Millennium** -- and **the times immediately foregoing** -- wherein these prophecies will be **much the most notably accomplished**. And what is peculiarly glorious...is the gospelizing [of] the New and before unknown World [the ‘New World’] -- that which is so remote, so unknown, where the devil had reigned quietly from the beginning of the World. This is larger -- taking in **America**, *Terra Australis Incognita* [or unknown **Australasia**], *Hollandia Nova* [alias **Australia**] and all those yet undiscovered tracts of land” -- than is much of the ‘Old World’ known to Europe.⁵⁹⁸

“My mind has been much entertained and delighted with the Scripture promises and prophecies which relate to the future glorious advancement of Christ’s Kingdom upon Earth.... The future promised advancement of the Kingdom of Christ, is an event unspeakably happy and glorious. The Scriptures speak of that time, as a time wherein God and His Son Jesus Christ will be most eminently glorified on Earth.”⁵⁹⁹

“I think we may well look upon the discovery of so great a part of the World [as America], and bringing the Gospel into it – as one thing by which Divine Providence is preparing the way for the future glorious times of the Church when Satan’s kingdom shall be overthrown throughout the whole habitable globe, on every side, and on all its Continents....

“This is a work which will be accomplished by means, by the preaching of the Gospel and the use of the ordinary means of grace – and so shall be gradually brought to pass.... The Spirit of God shall be gloriously poured out for the wonderful revival and propagation of religion....

This pouring out of the Spirit of God will not effect the overthrow of Satan's kingdom, till there has first been a violent and mighty opposition made....

“Christ and His Church shall, in ‘the battle of that great day of God Almighty’ [Revelation 16:14f], obtain a **complete** and entire **victory** over their enemies.... Consequent on this victory, **Satan’s visible kingdom on Earth shall be destroyed.** When Satan is conquered in this last battle, the Church of Christ will have easy work of it....

“When the devil was cast out of the Roman Empire...it was represented as Satan's being cast out of Heaven to the Earth (Revelation 12:9). But it is represented [later here] that he shall be cast out of the Earth too, and shut up in hell (Revelation 20:1-3). This is the greatest revolution by far.... This shall put an end to the Church's suffering state (for a ‘thousand years’).”⁶⁰⁰

“Though we do not know the time in which the **conversion of Israel** (Romans 11:12-15) will come to pass, yet this much we may determine by Scripture -- that it will be **before** the glory of the Gentile part of the Church shall be fully accomplished. Because it is said that their [the Jews'] ‘coming in’ shall be **‘life from the dead’ to the Gentiles.**”⁶⁰¹

“The Gospel shall begin to be **preached** with abundantly **greater clearness** and **power** than had heretofore been. For this great work of God shall be brought to pass by the preaching of the Gospel.... [It] is represented in Revelation 14:6-8, that **before** Babylon falls, the Gospel shall be powerfully preached and propagated in the **World**.... [This will result in] turning **many** from **heresy**, and from **Popery**, and from **other false religions.** And also [it will be effective] for turning many from their vice and profaneness, and for bringing **vast multitudes** savingly home to Christ. That work of conversion shall go on in a wonderful manner, and spread **more** and **more.**”

“In this last great opposition which shall be made against the Church to defend the kingdom of Satan, all the forces of Antichrist and Mahometanism and Heathenism will be united – all the forces of Satan's visible kingdom through the whole World of mankind. And therefore it is said that ‘spirits of devils [or demons] shall go forth unto the kings of the Earth and of the whole World, to gather them together to the battle of the great day of God Almighty.’ And these spirits are said to come ‘out of the mouth of the Dragon, and out of the mouth of the Beast, and out of the mouth of the False-prophet’ – *i.e.*, there shall be the spirit of Popery and the spirit of Mahometanism and the spirit of Heathenism all united....

“Christ and His Church shall in this battle obtain a **complete** and entire **victory** over their enemies. They [the latter] shall be totally routed and overthrown.... The devil is utterly baffled and confounded, and knows not what else to do. He now sees his Antichristian and Mahometan and Heathenish kingdoms through[out] the World, all tumbling about his ears.... The kingdom of Antichrist shall be utterly overthrown. His kingdom and dominion has been much brought down already by the [fifth] vial poured out on his throne in the Reformation. But then it [by the seventh vial] shall be utterly destroyed.

“Then shall be proclaimed: ‘Babylon is fallen, is fallen!’ When the seventh angel sounds – ‘the time, times, and half, shall be out; and time [of waiting] shall be no longer.’ Then shall be

accomplished concerning Antichrist the things which are written in the eighteenth chapter of Revelation of the spiritual Babylon, that great city Rome or the idolatrous Roman government that has for so many ages been the great enemy of the Christian Church -- first under Heathenism, then under Popery.”⁶⁰²

“The visible kingdom of Satan shall be overthrown, and the kingdom of Christ set up **on the ruins of it** – everywhere, throughout the **whole habitable globe**. Now shall the promise made to Abraham be fulfilled, that ‘in him and in his seed **all the families** of the Earth shall be blessed.’ And **Christ now shall become the desire of all nations**, agreeable to Haggai 2:7. Now **the Kingdom of Christ shall in the most strict and literal sense be extended to all nations and the whole Earth**.”

“There are many passages of Scripture that can be understood in no other sense. What can be more universal than that in Isaiah 11:9, ‘For the Earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord as the waters cover the sea?’ As much as to say as there is not part of the channel or cavity of the sea anywhere -- but what shall be covered with the knowledge of God! So it is foretold in Isaiah 45:22, that all the ends of the Earth shall look to Christ and be saved. And to show that the words are to be understood in the most universal sense, it is said in the next verse: ‘I have sworn by Myself, the Word is gone out of My mouth in righteousness and shall not return -- [so] that unto Me every knee shall bow, every tongue shall swear!’ So the most universal expression is used [in] Daniel 7:27 -- ‘And the kingdom and dominion and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole Heaven shall be given to the people of the saints of the Most High God.’ You see, the expression includes all under the whole Heaven.”⁶⁰³

“Then shall the many nations of **Africa**, the nations of Negroes and other Heathens who chiefly fill that quarter of the World – who now seem to be in a state but little above the beasts, and in many respects much below them – be enlightened with glorious light and delivered from all their darkness and shall become a civil, Christian, understanding, and holy people. Then shall the vast Continent of **America**, which now in so great a part of it is covered with barbarous ignorance and cruelty, be everywhere covered with glorious Gospel light and Christian love. And instead of worshipping the devil as now they do, they shall serve God. And praises shall be sung everywhere to the Lord Jesus Christ, the blessed Saviour of the World.”⁶⁰⁴

“Then all countries and nations, even those which are now most ignorant, shall be full of light and knowledge. Great **knowledge shall prevail everywhere**. It may be hoped that then many of the Negroes and Indians will be divines, and that excellent books will be published in Africa, in Ethiopia, in Tartary, and other now the most barbarous countries. And not only learned men, but others of more ordinary education shall then be very knowing in religion....

“To say something of the duration of this state of the Church’s prosperity.... The Scriptures everywhere represent it to be of long continuance.... Revelation 20:4, ‘And...they lived and reigned with Christ **a thousand years**.’ Isaiah 60:15, ‘I will make thee an eternal excellency, **a joy of many generations**.’”

“This may suffice as to the prosperous state of the Church. Through the greater part of the period from the destruction of Satan’s visible kingdom in the World (Revelation 16:13 to 19:21)

to Christ's appearing in the clouds of Heaven to judgment (Revelation 20:3-12f)."⁶⁰⁵

"Oh, that God may, everywhere, revive His work – by pouring down abundantly His Spirit on all flesh, according to the promises of His Word, particularly those relating to the last days! The last chapters of Isaiah portray and promise the glory of Zion's revivals. It is our duty to pray for God's Kingdom, and its advance! The thought of Jews, Muslims and Heathens perishing in ignorance of Christ – should stir men to pray for the coming of Christ's Kingdom among those people....

"Oh that He would appear in His glory and favour Zion, and manifest His compassion to the World of mankind, by an abundant effusion of His Holy Spirit on all the Churches and the whole habitable Earth, to revive True Religion in all parts of Christendom and to deliver all nations from their great and manifold spiritual calamities and miseries, and bless them with the unspeakable benefits of the Kingdom of our glorious Redeemer, and fill the whole Earth with His glory!"⁶⁰⁶

"The future promised advancement of the kingdom of Christ is an event unspeakably happy and glorious. The Scriptures speak of it as a time wherein God and his Son Jesus Christ will be most eminently glorified on Earth -- a time wherein God Who till then had dwelt between the cherubims and concealed Himself in the holy of holies in the secret of His tabernacle behind the veil in the thick darkness, should openly shine forth and all flesh should see His glory and God's people in general have as great a privilege as the High Priest alone had once a year or as Moses had in the mount.

"A time this, wherein the 'temple of God in Heaven should be opened and there should be seen the ark of His testament' (Revelation 11:19); a time wherein both God will be greatly glorified and His saints made unspeakably happy in the view of His glory; a time, wherein God's people should not only once see the light of God's glory as Moses [did], or see it once a year with the high priest, but should dwell and walk continually in it. And it should be their constant daily light, instead of the light of the sun (Isaiah 2:5; Psalm 89:15; Isaiah 60:19). Which light should be so much more glorious than the light of the sun or moon -- that the moon shall be confounded and the sun ashamed, when the Lord of hosts should reign in Mount Zion and in Jerusalem, before His ancients, gloriously. Isaiah 24:23.

"It is represented as a time of vast increase of knowledge and understanding, especially in divine things; a time wherein God would 'destroy the face of the covering cast over all people and the veil spread over all nations' (Isaiah 25:7) wherein 'the light of the moon shall be as the light of the sun and the light of the sun seven-fold' (Isaiah 30:26). 'And the eyes of them that see, shall not be dim; and the heart of the rash, shall understand knowledge' (Isaiah 32:3-4). 'And they shall no more teach every man his neighbour and every man his brother, saying, "Know the Lord!" Because they shall all know Him, from the least to the greatest' (Jeremiah 31:24.)

"It is declared to be a time of general holiness (Isaiah 60:30). 'Thy people shall be all righteous.' A time of prevailing eminent holiness, when little children shall, in spiritual attainments, be as though they were a hundred years old (Isaiah 65:20); wherein 'he that is feeble among God's people shall be as David' (Zechariah 12:8). A time wherein holiness should be

as it were inscribed on everything, on all men's common business and employments, and the common utensils of life all shall be dedicated to God and improved to holy purposes. Isaiah 23:8, 'her merchandise and hire shall be holiness to the Lord.' Zechariah 14:20-21, 'in that day shall there be upon the bells of the horses "holiness unto the Lord"; and the pots in the Lord's house shall be like the bowls before the altar; yea, every pot in Jerusalem and in Judah shall be holiness unto the Lord of hosts.'

"A time shall come wherein religion and True Christianity shall in every respect be uppermost in the World; wherein God will cause His Church to 'arise and shake herself from the dust, and put on her beautiful garments, and sit down on a throne; and the poor shall be raised from the dust and the beggar from the dunghill and shall be set among princes and made to inherit the throne of God's glory' -- a time wherein vital piety shall take possession of thrones and palaces, and those that are in most exalted stations shall be eminent in holiness (Isaiah 49:23). 'And kings shall be thy nursing fathers, and their queens thy nursing mothers' (chapter 60:16). 'Thou shalt suck the breasts of kings' (Isaiah 66:12). 'The daughter of Tyre shall be there with a gift; the rich among the people shall entreat thy favour.'

"[It shall be] a time of wonderful union and the most universal peace, love, and sweet harmony.... The nations shall 'beat their swords into plow-shares' &c. and God will 'cause wars to cease to the ends of the Earth and break the bow and cut the spear in sunder and burn the chariot in the fire.... The mountains shall bring forth peace to God's people, and the little hills by righteousness.... The wolf shall dwell with the lamb...and...God's people shall dwell in a peaceable habitation and in sure dwellings and quiet resting places' (Isaiah 32:17-18 and 33:20-21).

"A time shall come wherein all heresies and false doctrines shall be exploded, and the Church of God shall not be rent with a variety of jarring opinions (Zechariah 14:9). 'The Lord shall be king over all the Earth: in that day there shall be one Lord, and His Name one.' All superstitious ways of worship shall be abolished and all agree in worshipping God in His Own appointed way and agreeably to the purity of His institutions (Jeremiah 32:39). 'I will give them one heart and one way -- [so] that they may fear Me forever, for the good of them and their children after them.'

"[It shall be] a time wherein the whole Earth shall be united as one holy city, one heavenly family. Men of all nations shall as it were dwell together, and sweetly correspond one with another -- as brethren and children of the same father.... The prophecies often speak of God's people at that time as 'the children of God' and brethren one to another; all 'appointing over them one head'; gathered to one 'House of God to worship the King, the Lord of hosts.'

"A time approaches wherein this whole great society shall appear in glorious beauty, in genuine amiable Christianity and excellent order -- as 'a city compact[ed] together, the perfection of beauty, an eternal excellency'; shining with a reflection of the glory of Jehovah risen upon it, which shall be attractive and ravishing to all kings and nations. And it shall appear 'as a bride adorned for her husband.'

"[It shall be] a time of great temporal prosperity; of great health (Isaiah 33:24). 'The inhabitant shall not say, "I am sick of long life!"' (Isaiah 55:22). 'As the days of a tree, are the

days of my people.’ A time wherein the earth shall be abundantly fruitful. Psalm 72; Isaiah 6:23f; Amos 9:16; and many other places. A time wherein the World shall be delivered from that multitude of sore calamities which before had prevailed (Ezekiel 47:20). And there shall be an universal blessing of God upon mankind, in soul and body, and in all their concerns, and all manner of tokens of God’s presence and favour. And ‘God shall rejoice over them, as the bridegroom rejoiceth over his bride, and the mountains shall as it were drop down new wine, and the hills shall flow with milk.’ Joel 3:18.

“[It shall be] a time of great and universal joy we are taught to expect will take place through all the Earth -- when ‘from the utmost ends of the Earth shall be heard songs, even glory to the righteous’; and God’s people ‘shall with joy draw water out of the wells of salvation.’ God shall ‘prepare in His holy mountain a feast of fat things, a feast of wine on the lees, of fat things full of marrow, of wines on the lees well refined’ -- which feast is represented, Revelation 19, as ‘the marriage supper of the Lamb.’ Yea, the Scriptures represent it not only as a time of universal joy on Earth but extraordinary joy in Heaven among the angels and saints, the holy apostles and prophets there. Revelation 18:20 and 19:1-9.

“Yea, the Scriptures represent it as a time of extraordinary rejoicing with Christ Himself, the glorious Head, in Whom all things in Heaven and Earth shall then be gathered together in one.... ‘The Lord thy God in the midst of thee is mighty; He will save; He will rejoice over thee with joy; He will rest in His love; He will joy over thee with singing.’ And the very fields, trees, and mountains shall then as it were rejoice and break forth into singing. Isaiah 55:12.

“‘Ye shall go out with joy, and be led forth with peace; the mountains and the hills shall break forth before you into singing, and all the trees of the field shall clap their hands.’ Isaiah 44:23. ‘Sing, O Heavens! For the Lord hath done it. Shout, ye lower parts of the Earth. Break forth into singing, ye mountains, O forest, and every tree therein! For the Lord hath redeemed Jacob, and glorified Himself in Israel.’

“Such being the state of things in this future promised glorious day of the Church’s prosperity -- surely it is worth praying for! Nor is there any one thing whatsoever, if we viewed things aright, for which a regard to the glory of God, a concern for the kingdom and honour of our Redeemer, a love to His people, pity to perishing sinners, love to our fellow-creatures in general, compassion to mankind under their various and sore calamities and miseries, a desire of their temporal and spiritual prosperity, love to our country, our neighbours, and friends, yea, and to our own souls -- would dispose us to be so much in prayer -- as for the dawning of this happy day, and the accomplishment of this glorious event!”⁶⁰⁷

– **JONATHAN EDWARDS**, American President of Princeton University (A.D. 1739)

247) “We see such numbers of the most ignorant and barbarous of mankind (such as the American Indians under Brainerd’s preaching), in the space of a few months ‘turned from darkness to light and from the power of sin and Satan unto God.’ It gives us encouragement to

wait and pray for that blessed time when our **victorious Redeemer shall in a more signal manner** than He has yet done, display the ‘banner of His cross’ [and] **march on -- [viz.] from ‘conquering’ to ‘conquer’ – till ‘the kingdoms of this World are become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ.’**

“Yea, we cannot but lift up our heads with joy and hope that it may be the dawn of that bright and illustrious day when the Sun of Righteousness shall ‘arise and shine from one end of the Earth to the other.’ Then, to use the language of the inspired Prophets, ‘the Gentiles shall come to His light and kings to the brightness of His rising.’ In consequence of which, ‘the wilderness and solitary places shall be glad and the desert rejoice and blossom as the rose’.... And we earnestly desire the most indigent to join, at least in their wishes and prayers, that this work may prosper more and more – till the ‘whole Earth is filled with the glory of the Lord.’”⁶⁰⁸

– **SCOTS SOCIETY FOR PROMOTION OF CHRISTIAN KNOWLEDGE** (1740)

248) “Though the Gospel had not been preached in China and America by Jesus’ twelve disciples, the ‘Sun of Righteousness’ has gone on gradually enlightening those ‘dark places of the Earth.’ And...‘the fullness of time’ is fast approaching when Isaiah 11:9 will be fulfilled, and Jews and Gentiles shall be united in the Church of Christ.”⁶⁰⁹

– **ALEXANDER WEBSTER**, Scottish Preacher and Theologian (A.D. 1741)

249) “I believe there is such a work begun, as neither we nor our fathers have heard of. The **beginnings** are amazing. How unspeakably glorious will the end be! In New England, the Lord takes poor sinners by hundreds, I may say by thousands. In Scotland, the fruits of my poor labours are abiding and apparent. In Wales, the Word of the Lord runs and is glorified – as also in many places in England. In London, our Saviour is doing great things daily.”⁶¹⁰ “Fulfil Thy ancient promises! And let Thy Son have the Heathen for His inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the Earth for His possession!”⁶¹¹

“The Scriptures are so far from encouraging us to plead for a diminution of divine influence in these last days of the Gospel.... On the contrary, we are encouraged to expect, hope, long, and pray for – larger and more extensive showers of divine influence than any former age hath ever yet experienced! For, are we not therein taught to pray ‘that we may be filled [and indeed keep on being filled] with all the fullness of God’ -- and to wait for a glorious epoch ‘when the Earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the Lord as the waters cover the seas’ (Isaiah 11)?”⁶¹²

– **GEORGE WHITEFIELD**, Greatest English Evangelist of all time (A.D. 1742)

250) “Psalm 2:8 prophesies the **conversion** of the **Gentiles**. The efforts of the Society in Scotland for Propagating Christian Knowledge is to be linked with the prophesied overthrow of Satan, the fall of Antichrist, and Christ’s reign over **all** nations.”⁶¹³

– JOSEPH SEWALL, American Commissioner of the New England Company (1742)

251) “Many promises...have respect to the **magnificent enlargement**, light, purity, glory and felicity of the divine Redeemer’s Kingdom in these last days.”⁶¹⁴

– SAMUEL BUELL, New England Theologian (A.D. 1742)

252) “The knowledge of the **truth shall** spread and **fill** the **Earth** – as the waters do the sea [Isaiah 11:9 *cf.* Habakkuk 2:14].”⁶¹⁵

– NATHANIEL APPLETON, New England Theologian (A.D. 1742)

253) “For myself, I am not ashamed to own I am one of those who look...for a **far** more glorious state of things, both among **Jews** and **Gentiles**, than has ever yet been seen.”

– CHARLES CHAUNCY, New England Theologian (A.D. 1742)

254) “I had a strong hope that God would ‘bow the heavens and come down’ and do some marvellous work among the Heathen. And when I was ridings to the Indians, three miles, my heart was continually going up to God for His presence and assistance, and hoping and almost expecting that God would make this the day of His power and grace amongst the poor Indians....

“Oh, that the Kingdom of the dear Lord might come! Oh, that the poor Indians might quickly be gathered in – in **great** numbers!.... The Redeemer’s Kingdom is all that is valuable in the Earth, and I could not but long for the promotion of it in the World!”⁶¹⁷

“I poured out my soul for the World, friends, and enemies. My soul was concerned not so much for souls as such, but rather for Christ’s Kingdom – that it might appear in the World that

God might be **known** to be God in **the whole Earth!**”⁶¹⁸

– **DAVID BRAINERD**, American Missionary to the Delaware Indians (A.D. 1743)

255)

“**Jesus the Saviour reigns** --
the God of truth and love!
When He had purged our stains,
He took His seat above....

“He sits at God’s right hand
till all His foes submit
and bow to His command
and **fall beneath His feet.**”⁶¹⁹

– **CHARLES WESLEY**, Renowned Methodist Songwriter in England (A.D. 1746)

256) “We will have a hand in all that **conversion-work** thro’ the **whole Earth**, which shall be the fruit of the Lord’s hearing these united prayers.”⁶²⁰

– **JAMES ROBE**, Chaplain to the Countess of Huntingdon (A.D. 1750)

257) “The approach of **better** times for Christianity may be compared to the gradual peep of verdure through the dissolving snow, with here and there a green patch more or less conspicuous. The large wintry covering spread over all the nations, and which we are waiting to see dissolve – consists of **Muhammadanism, Popery and Infidelity**. These are alike, as amounting to one and the same usurpation over immortal souls.”⁶²¹

“**All** such obstacles to the incoming of the Gentiles **will** be broken through at the proper time. And when an ‘**abundance**’ of the **Gentiles** have **been** converted, the hardening of Israel will terminate. The full **conversion** of **Israel** will then **lead** to the **wider** blessing of the **World.**”⁶²²

– **JOHANN ALBRECHT BENGEL**, German Professor at Denkendorff (A.D. 1750)

258) “These thousand years [of Revelation 20 here under discussion] bring a new, full, and

lasting immunity from all outward and inward evils (the authors of which are now removed), and [bring] **an affluence of all blessings**. But **such a time...is still to come**, and will not precede or parallel but wholly **follow** the times of the Beast.”⁶²³

– **JOHN WESLEY**, English Founder of the Methodist Church (A.D. 1750)

259) “But for the present – let it suffice you [Apostles in Acts 1:8], to be told that -- ere long, though I say not exactly when -- you shall receive an extraordinary power of the Holy Spirit coming upon you. And in consequence of that, you shall be[come] abundantly qualified to be My witnesses both in the city of Jerusalem and in all the land of Judea. And no only so. But in Samaria too...and even to the remotest parts of the Earth. The barbarous Natives...you shall visit with a success which shall gloriously illustrate My Father’s promise of ‘giving Me the Heathen for Mine inheritance and the uttermost part of the Earth for My possession’ [Psalm 2:8]....

“There should [accordingly] be: 1). daily prayer for missions; 2, quarterly prayer meetings for missions; 3), **study of Biblical promises of the spread of Christ’s Kingdom**; 4, dissemination of information on missions; and 5) contributions for missions. “We do hereby express our desire that some time may be then spent, if God give an opportunity, in reviewing those promises of Scripture which relate to the establishment of our Redeemer’s Kingdom in the World – [so] that our faith may be supported, and our prayers quickened by the contemplation of them.”⁶²⁴

– **PHILIP DODDRIDGE**, English Seminary Teacher (A.D. 1750)

260) “May His Kingdom be enlarged – and the fullness of the Gentiles brought into His holy Church!”⁶²⁵

– **JOHN SERGEANT**, American Professor at Yale (A.D. 1753)

261) “These 2300 days [mentioned in Daniel chapter 8] may be considered as so many years, which will bring it down to the end of the sixth millennium or thereabout; when it may be hoped there will be a new face of things upon the Sanctuary and Church of God, and a cleansing of it from all corruption in doctrine, discipline, worship and conversation.... Toward the end of the time appointed, many persons will be stirred up to inquire into these things delivered in this book [cf. Daniel 12:3f]....

“Knowledge of all spiritual things, of all evangelic[al] truths and doctrines, will be abundantly

enlarged at this time.... The Earth will be filled and covered with it, as the sea with its waters. See Isaiah 11:9; Habakkuk 2:19....

“Christ, as man, swears by His Divine Father...‘that it [the Church’s prior troubles] shall be for a time, times, and an half’ [Daniel 12:7].... The troubles of the Church would last so long.... At the **end** of that date here fixed, a glorious scene would open and amazing things appear -- to the great joy and comfort of the saints.”

Yet first, there would be a time of trouble. How long would that ‘time of trouble’ last? Explains Gill: “‘Time’ signifies a prophetic year, or 360 years; and ‘times’ two prophetic years, or 720 years; and ‘half’ a time, half a prophetic year or 180 years -- in all, 1260 years. This is the exact date and duration of the reign of Antichrist; of the Church’s being in the wilderness...; and of the treading under foot [of] the holy city.... ‘When he’ (antichrist) ‘shall have done scattering’ the Church and People of God in general...his war with the saints and victories over them will be ended.... Then all the afflictions of the Church will be at an end, and glorious times will succeed...: the spiritual reign of Christ...and the Millennium...

“‘There shall be a 1290 days.’ From the beginning of the reign of Antichrist to the end of it, are 1260 days or years.... Here, 30 days or years are added.... ‘**Blessed** is he that waits, and comes to the 1335 days’ [Daniel 12:13]. This is an addition of 45 days or years more, beginning at the end of [the] 1290.... During this time the vials will be poured out upon all the antichristian states, and the Turkish [**Islamic**] **empire be destroyed**, and all the enemies of Christ and His Church removed.... It seems best to interpret these numbers, as at first, of the date of the reign of Antichrist, and as showing the full and certain end of it; when there will be blessed times, halcyon days indeed!”⁶²⁶

“This [Revelation 14:6] will be when the ‘angel’ – not any particular Minister [such] as Luther or any other but a set of Gospel-Ministers in the latter day, so called from their office – ‘shall flee in the midst of heaven’; discharge their office with great readiness and swiftness, and in the most public manner in the Church of God. ‘Having the everlasting Gospel’ – not a little dry morality, but the Gospel of the grace of God; the good news of life and salvation by Jesus Christ....

“These will be very diligent and industrious, spare no pains, be indefatigable in their work. They will be ‘many,’ and ‘will run to and fro.’ And by this means, ‘knowledge’ will be ‘increased.’ [Daniel 12]. This will be the time, even in the Philadelphian state (Revelation 3:7), when there will be an ‘open door set’ which ‘no man can shut’ – an opportunity of preaching the Gospel everywhere, and which will be taken and used.” This preaching will be blest by “very large conversions everywhere.” Roman Catholics, Muslims and Pagans will all be converted.⁶²⁷

– **JOHN GILL**, Eminent British Baptist Preacher and Theologian (A.D. 1753)

262) “We have the strongest assurances that Jesus will yet take to Him His strong power, and

reign in a **more extensive** and illustrious manner than He has ever yet done. And that **the kingdoms of the Earth shall yet become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ.**⁶²⁸

– **SAMUEL DAVIES**, Father of the First Presbytery of Virginia (A.D. 1756)

263) “Hail, noble heroes! Brave followers of the Lamb! Your General has sacrificed His life in this glorious cause, and spoiled principalities and powers on the cross. And now, He lives and reigns....

“Your predecessors the Prophets, Apostles and Martyrs -- with undaunted courage, have marched into the field of battle and conquered -- dying, and now reign in Heaven. Beyond, ye are risen up in their room, are engaged in the same cause....

“The time of the last general battle draws on, when a glorious **victory** is to be won. There is a glorious future for the World, during which **more shall be redeemed than ever before dwelt upon the face of the Earth** from the foundation of the World.” Then, “above seventeen thousand would be saved, to [every] one lost.”⁶²⁹

– **JOSEPH BELLAMY**, American Minister in Connecticut (A.D. 1758)

264) “A period will **certainly** commence, when the Kingdom of Christ shall **prevail** – far and wide. The Earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord as the waters cover the seas. **All** the ends of the **Earth** shall see His salvation.

“Princes shall be subject to the Redeemer’s sceptre, and **Ethiopia** shall stretch forth her hands unto God. The **fullness** of the **Gentiles** shall come in, and **all** Israel shall be **saved**.

“Our Lord has taught us to pray that His Kingdom may come. And those who make mention of the Lord, should not keep silence. They should continue to present their ardent petitions to Him, and give Him no rest till He establish His Church **throughout the nations** and make her a praise in the Earth.”⁶³⁰

– **JOHN FAWCETT**, English Baptist Minister in Halifax (A.D. 1764)

265) “**About A.D. 1866 or 2016**, we expect more vials of divine wrath to be poured out upon the [Vatican] Antichristian State, which...together with the pure preaching of the Gospel shall abolish their pretended religion at the same time that the delusions of **Mahomet** shall be **banished** from

the East. The princes who had long supported the papal interest, and their subjects, enlightened by the Gospel, shall, with an active zeal, detest its wickedness and accelerate its ruin [cf. Revelation 16:10-21]....

“The [Romish] Antichristian and Mahometan delusions being extirpated from the face of the Earth -- the Gospel will, we expect with amazing rapidity and success, spread through[out] the whole habitable World.

“Both Jews and Gentiles shall heartily embrace it, and turn to the Lord with one consent and united in His body the Church [Romans 11:11-32]. Then shall her doctrine, worship, discipline and government be restored to the apostolic plan, and exactly correspond with the measuring line...of God’s Word.

“Astonishing shall be the abilities, labours and success of her Pastors and other Officers; and amazing the knowledge, zeal, order, unanimity, and peace of her Members.... So general shall be the reformation of mankind, that perhaps few will remain apparently wicked. And long, perhaps a thousand years, shall this happy period continue [Revelation 20:1-6]....

“The glory and happiness of this thousand years’ reign of the saints [in Revelation 20] is to be understood not literally but spiritually and figuratively, according to the common style of the book. It could not [be] consist[ent] with the happiness of the saints [in glory, for them] to leave the[ir] heavenly mansions and [to come and] live in bodies needing meat and drink. Nor, if their bodies were raised spiritual and incorruptible, would they need any such thing. And in vain would Satan instigate the wicked to war against, and cut off, spiritual and incorruptible bodies....

“The resurrection of the Martyrs’ and Confessors’ souls here spoken of, must therefore mean not the resurrection of [the bodies of] these deceased persons but the remarkable reformation, deliverance, comfort and activity of the Church -- in their successors. Cf. Romans 11:15; Ezekiel 42:1-14; Psalm 85:6; Hosea 6:2-3; Zechariah 10:1....

“This restoration of the Church to this peaceable and glorious state, [would be] after a long ‘death’ under the reign of Antichrist.” That latter is “‘Anti-Christian Rome’ or Revelation’s ‘Sodom’ [and] ‘Egypt’ and ‘Babylon’ – on account of her [the Papacy’s] likeness to them in luxury, cruelty, pride, and idolatry....

“Multitudes of Jews and Gentiles shall be converted to Christ and shall enjoy much spiritual, delightful and honourable fellowship with Christ and with one another -- and have the governing power in the Earth. [This] is called ‘the first resurrection’ – as it is a figure and pledge of the general [bodily] resurrection of the saints to eternal life at the last day. The wicked will not ‘live’ again, till the end of the thousand years. That is, they will be reduced to the same condition in which Christ’s slain witnesses were a little before (Revelation 11:7-9) – having no authority, power or activity, to make head[way] against Christ and His cause.”⁶³¹

– JOHN BROWN, Scottish Professor at Haddington (A.D. 1765)

266) “The prophecies **still awaiting** accomplishment, are: the flight of the angel preaching the everlasting Gospel to **all nations** (Revelation 14:6); the reign of Christ as the one and **only Lord of the Earth** (Zechariah 14:9); the triumph of **peace** over destruction, and righteousness over judgment (Isaiah 32:16); the universality of joy and **productivity** (Isaiah 35:1); and the **World-wide** fear of the Lord (Isaiah 59:19).”⁶³²

– **JOHN GIBSON**, Scottish Preacher and Theologian (A.D. 1768)

267) “Shout, for the blessed Jesus reigns! Through distant lands His triumphs **spread...**
Gentiles and Jews His Laws **obey**; nations remote their off’rings bring
and unconstrained their homage pay to their exalted God and King.
O may His holy Church **increase**, His Word and Spirit still **prevail** --
while angels celebrate His praise, and saints His **growing** glories hail!”⁶³³

– **BENJAMIN BEDDOME**, Famous British Hymnwriter (A.D. 1769)

268) Men will be **changed** into docile and **courteous citizens** (Isaiah 11:9). “This happy **transformation** shall extend **wide** as the Gospel **extends**, and keep pace with that knowledge of the Lord by which it is produced.... Watered by the dew of Heaven, the seed which was as a grain of mustard hath shot up into a tree whose branches have spread far and whose fruit is healthful and rich.”⁶³⁴

– **JAMES BROWN**, Scottish Preacher and Theologian (A.D. 1769)

269) “All that we have witnessed, is but the **dawn of a brighter** day.... I do not [here on Earth] expect to see Christ with my bodily eyes till the Last Day... Let God **arise**; let His enemies be scattered!”⁶³⁵

– **JOHN ELIAS**, Famous Welsh Revivalist Preacher (A.D. 1770)

270) “Question: What then is the desire of all good men, with respect to the coming of the Gospel Kingdom? Answer: that **all nations be brought to Christ by the preaching** of it, and so

Christ's Kingdom be **greatly** exalted and **enlarged**. Isaiah 2:2ff., q.v....

“You read of a blessed time, Zechariah 8ff, when the Earth shall be full of holiness; when the Jews that are now as a lost generation to the eye of sense, shall be called, and an eminent degree of sanctification shall be visible in them.”⁶³⁶

– **JOHN FLAVEL**, English Minister at Dartmouth (A.D. 1772)

271) “O’er the gloomy hills of darkness, cheered by no celestial ray,
Sun of Righteousness, arising -- bring the bright, the glorious day!
Send the Gospel to the Earth’s remotest bounds!...
Fly abroad, thou mighty Gospel, win and conquer, never cease!
May thy lasting, wide dominions multiply and still increase!
Sway Thy sceptre, Saviour, all the **World** around!”⁶³⁷

– **WILLIAM WILLIAMS**, Famous Welsh Hymnwriter (A.D. 1772)

272) Many prophecies foretell the gradual growth of Christianity among the Gentiles while the Jews remain obdurate. Other predictions were partially fulfilled by initial Gentile conversions, and will be completely fulfilled when all nations acknowledge Christ in “the ‘time of the end’ – [which will be] characterized as the time of the universal conversion of nations, Jews and Gentiles to the True Religion.”⁶³⁸

– **JOHN GILLIES**, Scottish Preacher and Theologian (A.D. 1778)

273) “As far as the liberty of mankind has been impaired and their rights invaded and oppression and tyranny have prevailed in any kingdom or nation on Earth – so far has there been a repugnance to and a departure from the true spirit of the Holy Scriptures. The religion of the Bible...is so contrived as to deliver us from the vassalage of our lusts, and the oppression of man, by the same divine energy....

“The time cometh...when the aboriginal nations shall bow the knee at the Name of Jesus, and confess Him to be Lord to the glory of God the Father. And pure and undefiled religion shall prevail in the land. And there shall be one Lord, and His Name one. Amen!”⁶³⁹

– **GAD HITCHCOCK**, American Minister at Plymouth Massachusetts (A.D. 1774)

274) It is “**very proper**” for the eye for an eye *lex talionis* and many other things to be “copied from the Law of Moses into the laws of modern nations.”⁶⁴⁰ “We plead the cause that shall finally prevail. Religion shall rise from its ruins. And its oppressed state at present should not only excite us to pray, but encourage us to hope for its speedy revival.”⁶⁴¹

– **JOHN WITHERSPOON**, Theologian & Signer of Declaration of Independence (1776)

275) “O Lord, our heavenly Father...Who ...reignest with power supreme and uncontrolled over all the kingdoms, empires, and governments! Look down in mercy on these American people who have fled to Thee from the rod of the oppressor and thrown themselves on Thy gracious protection, desiring henceforth to be dependent only on Thee.... Give them wisdom in council and valor in the field! Defeat the malicious designs of our cruel adversaries!...

“Be Thou present, O God of wisdom, and direct the councils of this honorable assembly [so] that order, harmony and peace may be effectively restored...[and] religion and piety prevail and flourish among Thy people!... And crown them with everlasting glory in the World to come! All this we ask in the Name and through the merits of Jesus Christ, Thy Son, our Savior. Amen!”⁶⁴²

– **FIRST PRAYER EVER GIVEN IN THE AMERICAN CONGRESS** (A.D. 1777)

276) “Michael signifies...the divine Saviour, and cannot properly be understood of a created Angel. If the words ‘at that time’ [in Daniel 12:1] be referred to the destruction of Jerusalem by the Romans -- Christ's standing up may be explained of His incarnation for the redemption of His People and of the introduction of the Gospel....

“We understand ‘the time of trouble’ [in Daniel 12:1] to include all [that] the Jews have suffered -- from their crucifixion of Christ to the present day, and all that yet remains for them to suffer till their conversion to Christ [*cf.* Romans 11:12-15 & 11:25-32].... The expression of ‘running to and fro’ [Daniel 12:4], may refer to the future spread of the Gospel by the active labours of faithful Ministers....

“The Jews then ceased to be the holy People [Daniel 12:7f].... The **Antichristian usurpers [later, around A.D. 600f,]** began to ‘scatter the power’ of True Christians by false doctrine, persecutions, massacres, and religious wars....

“The imposture of **Mohamet** and the **papal usurpation** began about **the same time** [A.D.

600f].... We may allow both to be included, as a twofold attack upon the Church....

“The ‘taking away of the daily sacrifice’ and ‘the abomination that makes desolate’ [in Daniel 12:11], seem to be expressions applied to various different events of a similar nature.... The Romans destroyed the temple.... But they [these words] are here evidently applied to the establishment of idolatry and **persecution within the Church**, by the tyranny of **Antichrist** [viz. **Rome's Papacy** and the **abomination of the Romish Mass**]....

“It may, with equal justice, be applied to the **Mohametans invading and desolating Christendom and converting the churches into mosques**.... If this interpretation be true, the religion of Mohamet will prevail...1260 years. But then a great and **glorious revolution** [or epochal event] will follow.... Perhaps the destruction of Antichrist....

“But another **still greater, and more glorious**, will **succeed**.... What can this be so probably, as **the full conversion of the Gentiles to the Church of Christ** [cf. Romans 11:25f and Revelation 11:15 & 15:4]] and the beginning of the Millennium [Revelation 20:1-6].... The Prophet Daniel and the Apostle John in Revelation, spake of the same transactions....

“Let us not then be weary of well-doing, for in due season we shall reap -- if we faint not!’ [Galatians 6:9].... May the Lord send forth many Preachers, ‘who may run to and fro’ all over the Earth [Daniel 12:4], to guide those who sit in darkness into the ways of truth and righteousness.... **Glorious times approach. Happy will they be**, who live to see them!”⁶⁴³

– **THOMAS SCOTT**, Anglican Scholar and Bible Commentator (A.D. 1788f)

277) “To us a Child is born, to us a Son is giv’n.
Him shall the tribes of Earth obey; Him all the hosts of Heav’n....
He pow’r increasing, still shall spread; His reign no end shall know.
Justice shall guard His throne above, and peace abound below!”⁶⁴⁴

– **JOHN MORISON**, Christian Hymnwriter (A.D. 1781)

278) “**Sure** as Thy truth shall last, to Zion shall be given
the brightest glories Earth can yield, and brighter bliss of
Heaven!”⁶⁴⁵

“The great period of a thousand years, in which the Church shall enjoy unexampled peace and fidelity, is yet to begin. Its commencement is expected by the most judicious commentators, at a time near the year 2000.

“It begins, in the Revelation of St. John, with the destruction of Antichrist, under the seventh vial [Revelation 16:17f]. The Millennium will not make its full appearance suddenly, but come on gradually, though perhaps rapidly. And the first resurrection is ‘the conversion of mankind.’”

“The full establishment of the Millennium involves the entire reformation of all the erroneous doctrines of the Protestant nations and Churches, the renovation of sinners, the abolition of all sects, and the acknowledgement by the Jews of the true Messiah. The mouth of infidelity will then be stopped, and all nations cease from wars, jealousy, and hatred.”⁶⁴⁶

– TIMOTHY DWIGHT, American President of Yale University (A.D. 1781)

279) “There shall be an “Endless Increase of Christ’s Government.” The Gospel has marched westward from Canaan to New England. And in time, all America will expectedly “be full of pure and pious Churches.” The Gospel will continue its advance and conquer Asia, India, Persia, and Africa – before returning to Zion, where it began its course.”⁶⁴⁷

– THOMAS PRINCE, Scottish Preacher and Theologian (A.D. 1785)

280) “The Countess of Huntingdon’s school in America was designed to train evangelists to work among Colonists and Indians. Postmillennial expectations of the type of Jonathan Edwards were the spiritual foundation upon which her effort rested.”⁶⁴⁸

– LADY SELINA HASTINGS, Countess of Huntingdon (A.D. 1788)

281) “Hope is one of the principal springs that keep mankind in motion. It is vigorous, bold, and enterprising. It causes men to encounter dangers, endure hardships, and surmount difficulties innumerable, in order to accomplish the desired end. In religion, it is of no less consequence. It makes a considerable part of the religion of those that truly fear God....

“If I should die, I shall be able to say to the rising generation: God will surely visit you! A work is begun that will not end, till the World be subdued to the Saviour. I have done a little for Him, accompanied with much evil. The Lord grant that that may not be laid to our charge!”⁶⁴⁹

– ANDREW FULLER, First Secretary of the English Baptist Missionary Society (1790)

282) “The citizens of these United States have every reason for praise and gratitude to the God of their salvation.... The United States in Congress assembled do recommend it to the several States to set apart the second Thursday in December next as a day of public thanksgiving, that all the people may then assemble to celebrate, with grateful hearts and united voices, the praises of their supreme and all-bountiful Benefactory for His numberless favours and mercies; that He...hath so far crowned our united efforts with **success**....

“We are left in the undisputed possession of our liberty and independence, and of the fruits of our land, and in the free participation of the treasures of the sea.... He hath prospered the labours of our husbandmen with plentiful harvests. And above all...He hath been pleased to continue unto us the light of the blessed Gospel.... We also offer up fervent supplications that it may please Him:...to enable us to **improve** the days of prosperity by every good work, and to be lovers of peace and tranquillity [so] that He may be pleased to bless us in our husbandry, our commerce and navigation; to smile upon our seminaries and means of education; to cause pure religion and virtue to flourish; to give peace to all nations; and to fill the whole World with His glory.”⁶⁵⁰

– PRESIDENTIAL PROCLAMATION, appointing Thanksgiving Day (A.D. 1783)

283) “Are not the prophecies of ancient times hastening to a fulfilment, when this [American] wilderness shall blossom as a rose – the Heathen be given to the great Redeemer as His inheritance, and these uttermost parts of the Earth for His possession? Who knows but [that] the country for which we have fought and bled, may hereafter become a theater of greater events than yet have been known to mankind.... And may these great principles, in the end, become instrumental in bringing about that happy state of the World!”⁶⁵¹

– ELIAS BOUDINOT, First [Interim] President of the United States (A.D. 1783)

284) “Now, therefore, I do recommend and assign Thursday, the 26th day of November next, to be devoted by the people of these States, to the service of that great and glorious Being Who is the beneficent Author of all the good that was, that is, or that will be.... And also that we may then unite in most humbly offering our prayers and supplications to the great Lord and Ruler of nations, and beseech Him to pardon our national and other transgressions; ...to protect and guide all sovereigns and nations...to **promote the knowledge and practice of true religion and virtue**, and the increase of science among them and us; and, generally, to grant unto all mankind such a degree of temporal prosperity as He alone knows to be best.”⁶⁵²

– GEORGE WASHINGTON, First Regular President of the U.S.A. (A.D. 1789)

285) “God repeatedly made known His intention to **prevail** finally over all the power of the devil, and to destroy all his works and set up His Own Kingdom and interest among men and extend it as **universally** as Satan had extended his.”⁶⁵³

“After the fall of the papal Babylon the Great, Mohammadanism [too] will fall – at which time, I expect that the missionary spirit will greatly increase, and hosts go forth with the banner of the cross flying; not to subdue kingdoms with instruments of death, but with the words of everlasting life.”⁶⁵⁴

“When I left England, my **hope of India’s conversion** was very **strong**. But among many obstacles, it would die unless upheld by God. Well, I have God; and His Word is true. Though the superstitions of the Heathen were a thousand times stronger than they are, and the example of the Eutopeans [in India] a thousand times worse; though I were deserted by all and persecuted by all – yet my faith, fixed on that sure Word, would rise above all obstructions and overcome every trial. God’s cause will triumph!....

“I could not abandon the Mission for all the fellowships and finest spheres in England.... The work, to which God has set His hands, will infallibly prosper. Christ has begun to besiege this ancient and strong fortress [of India], and will assuredly carry it.”⁶⁵⁵ “Expect great things from God (cf. Isaiah 54:2-3)! Attempt great things for God!”⁶⁵⁶

– WILLIAM CAREY, Pioneer English Missionary to India (A.D. 1790)

286) “The coming of the Lord amongst us has been with such majesty, glory and irresistible power – that even His avowed enemies would be glad to hide themselves somewhere from the brightness of His coming.... If the Lord God is graciously pleased to continue the work as it has prevailed for some months past, for some months yet to come – the Devil’s kingdom will be in ruins in our neighbourhood.... And I am not without hopes but these are dawnings of the promised millennium and showers that precede the storm which will entirely overturn the kingdom of darkness.”⁶⁵⁷

– THOMAS CHARLES, Welsh Composer of the *Welsh Catechism* (A.D. 1791)

287) “We pray daily for the **conversion** of the **Heathen**, and for the **glory** of the **latter days**. So far, we do well.

“But if there be a plan proposed by which we may be instrumental in conveying the Gospel to them – our prayers, if unaccompanied with exertions to carry the plan into execution, are nothing better than hypocrisy... I ardently wish to see the Society [in Scotland for Propagating Christian Knowledge] extend its efforts for propagating the Gospel in every quarter of the globe!”⁶⁵⁸

“Till predictions be accomplished, we cannot, in most cases, define with certainty the precise period of fulfilment.” Therefore, to engage in the controversy on whether the Millennium will begin “at the distance of two hundred years” as “many” think, is not the main issue. Our duty is to preach as commanded by Christ.

“Only through preaching, will the Millennium be realized – and then, only in God’s time. Through proclamation, the Millennium, “that era when all the nations of the Earth shall have received the Gospel” – will be realized gradually. Two hundred years is hardly enough to accomplish this feat, and the Gospel must then enjoy even “more rapid success” than during apostolic days.”⁶⁵⁹

“To communicate to the preaching of the Gospel all the light and power necessary for the accomplishment of this amazing work, God will raise up in great abundance eminent Ministers – full of truth, piety, and zeal. What can be done by an individual of this class, in promoting the interests of Christ’s Kingdom – may be seen in the exertions of Knox in Scotland and Whitefield in England.

“An hundred such men – if not restrained by the ten horns which gave their power to the beast [in Daniel 7:7-24 cf. Revelation 13:1f & 17:12f] – would change the face of the Christian Church! In order to introduce the Millennium, many thousands of Ministers like them will God raise up and send forth into the harvest. And He will crown their labours with extraordinary success. From a multitude of such labourers in every country – what may not be expected.”⁶⁶⁰

– **DAVID BOGUE**, British Minister of Gosport (A.D. 1792)

288) “He Who raised the Scottish and brutalized Britons to sit in heavenly places in Christ Jesus -- can raise these [East Indian] slaves of superstition; purify their hearts by faith; and make them worshippers of the one God in spirit and in truth. The promises are fully sufficient to remove our doubts -- and make us anticipate that not very distant period when He will famish all the gods of India [cf. Zephaniah 2:11] and cause these very idolaters to cast their idols to the moles and to the bats [Isaiah 2:2-21], and renounce for ever the work of their own hands.”⁶⁶¹

– **FORM OF AGREEMENT**, Baptist Mission, Serampore, India (A.D. circa 1793)

289) “It appears reasonable and desirable that Jesus Christ, Who suffered shame and reproach in this World and was condemned and put to death as a malefactor by men, **should have this reproach wiped off in the sight of all men; and that the cause in which He suffered and died should prevail and be victorious in this same World** where He suffered and died.... In the day of salvation the Spirit of God will be poured out in His glorious fulness **and fill the World with holiness and salvation** as floods upon the dry ground....

“When the Millennium shall begin, **the inhabitants which shall then be on the Earth will be disposed to obey the divine command to subdue the Earth and multiply until they have filled it.** And they will have skill and be under all desirable advantages to do it. **And the Earth will soon be replenished with inhabitants and be brought to a state of high cultivation and improvement in every part of it, and will bring forth abundantly for the full supply of all.**”⁶⁶²

– **SAMUEL HOPKINS**, American Minister at Newport, Rhode Island (A.D. 1793)

290) “The redemption of the Church of God from the bondage of Papal Babylon, as well as from the general dominion of the Powers of Darkness, is a glorious and animating subject of prophecy. **The Lord hath spoken, and the decree shall be fulfilled....** What forbids that, in this day of general captivity, the Prophets of the Lord should look with the same faith and prayer **for the fulfilment of those promises which respect the spiritual deliverance of the Christian Church -- but from the bondage of Babylon, and from the thralldom of Satan?** And more especially, as **we evidently see marks of the divine progress in this work** in His present judgments among the nations of the Earth, and particularly on mystical Babylon? **Which, all allow, are but a little to precede the glorious redemption and prosperity of the Church in the millennial day.**”⁶⁶³

– **DAVID AUSTIN**, American Minister in New Jersey (A.D. 1794)

291) “**The Bible and Missionary Societies are forerunners of the Millennium.** And **Christians should excite one another to fight the ‘peaceful wars’ to be fought before Christ’s millennial victory.**” Indeed, “**the trumpet of the millennial jubilee is, at last, [to be] heard among the thousands of Israel, and will soon fill all the tents of Jacob.**” Serious Christians of all denominations are espousing the cause of missions, and anxious to ‘prepare the way of the Lord.’⁶⁶⁴

Those prophecies should be noted which assure us that in this period “of the everlasting Gospel” **Christianity will become “the religion of every tribe and kindred and tongue.”** Christ’s peace, righteousness, truth and mercy will spread to all nations. And these prospects should cause us to “exert all our strength in disseminating the Gospel.”⁶⁶⁵

– **MELVILLE HORNE**, British Missiologist (A.D. 1794)

292) “May we not indulge a **hope that the happy period is approaching** when the Redeemer shall take unto Him His great power and reign?... Is it not probable that the great Disposer of all is now about, by shaking terribly the nations, to establish that spiritual and extensive Kingdom which cannot be shaken? Let us then...establish a [London] Missionary Society upon a large and liberal plan, for sending Ministers of Christ to preach the Gospel among the Heathen!”⁶⁶⁶

– **GEORGE BYRDER**, Co-Founder of the London Missionary Society (A.D. 1795)

293) “Arm of the Lord, awake, awake! Put on Thy strength, the nations shake!
And let the World, adoring, see -- triumphs of mercy wrought by Thee!
Say to the Heathen from Thy throne: ‘I am Jehovah, God alone!’
Thy voice their idols shall confound, and cast their altars to the ground!

“Let Zion’s time of favour, come! O, bring the tribes of Israel home;
and let our wond’ring eyes behold – Gentiles and Jews, in Jesus’ fold!
Almighty God, Thy grace proclaim in every clime of every name!
Let adverse pow’rs before Thee fall – and crown the Saviour Lord of

all!”⁶⁶⁷

– **WILLIAM SHRUBSOLE**, Famous Hymnwriter (A.D. 1795)

294) “Scripture Prophecy points our faith to the accomplishment of this promised event of the speedy and universal diffusion of the Gospel. And, while we anticipate it, it ought also to be our endeavour, by shewing an example of active zeal, to hasten the time when the knowledge of the Lord shall cover the Earth ‘as the waters cover the sea’ (Isaiah 11).”⁶⁶⁸

– **WILLIAM MCBEAN**, Scottish Minister at Alves (A.D. 1796)

295) “May the Scottish Church emulate Paul, who was constrained by Jesus’ love to “fly like a flaming seraph from pole to pole, to proclaim the ineffable glories of his lovely Jesus!”⁶⁶⁹

– JOHN ERSKINE, Famous Scottish Minister and Preacher (A.D. 1796)

296) Social reform should be placed in a millennial context. The Millennium is to be construed as the conversion of the nations by normal “steps of providence” and their extended happiness. Such “steps” include prayer, the provision of missionaries for the work, financial support, the overthrow of idolatry and infidelity, and judgments on guilty nations.⁶⁷⁰

– NEIL DOUGLAS, Scottish Theologian and Preacher (A.D. 1797)

297) “If a veneration for the religion of a people who profess and call themselves **Christians** and a fixed **resolution** to consider a decent **respect** for **Christianity** [be] among the **best recommendations for the public service**, can enable me in any degree to comply with your wishes – it shall be my strenuous endeavor that this sagacious injunction of the two Houses [of the U.S. Congress] shall not be without effect.

“Thus, as long as this [Mediaeval Romish] confederacy lasted, and the people were held in ignorance – liberty, and, with her, knowledge and virtue too, seem[ed] to have deserted the Earth.... And one age of darkness succeeded another, till God in His benign providence raised up the champions who began and conducted the Reformation....

“From the time of the Reformation to the first settlement of America, knowledge spread gradually in Europe; but [spread] **especially** in England. And in proportion as that increased and spread among the people, ecclesiastical and civil tyranny (which I use as synonymous expressions for the canon and feudal laws) seem to have lost their strength and weight.”⁶⁷¹

“By the President of the United States of America, a Proclamation. As the safety and **prosperity** of nations ultimately and essentially depends on the protection and blessing of Almighty God..., I do hereby recommend that Wednesday the Ninth Day of May next, be observed throughout the United States as a day of Solemn Humiliation, Fasting and Prayer: that the Citizens of these States, abstaining on that Day from their customary worldly occupations, offer their devout Addresses to the Father of Mercies...through the Redeemer of the World, freely to remit all our offences, and to incline us, by His Holy Spirit, to that sincere repentance and reformation which may afford us reason to hope for His inestimable favor and heavenly benediction...[so] that the health of the inhabitants of our land may be preserved, and their agriculture, commerce, fisheries, arts, and manufactures be blessed and prospered...and that the blessings of peace, freedom, and pure religion may be speedily extended to all the nations of the Earth....

“I have thought proper to recommend, and I do hereby recommend accordingly, that Thursday, the twenty-fifth day of April next, be observed throughout the United States of America as a day

of solemn humiliation, fasting, and prayer; that the citizens on that day...implore His pardoning mercy, through the Great Mediator and Redeemer...; that He would make us deeply sensible that 'righteousness exalteth a nation, but that sin is the reproach of any people'...; that He would favor us with fruitful seasons and so bless the labors of the husbandman as that there may be food in abundance for man and beast; that He would prosper our commerce, manufactures, and fisheries, and give success to the people in all their lawful industry and enterprise; that He would smile on our colleges, academies, schools, and seminaries of learning, and make them nurseries of sound science, morals, and religion...; and that He would extend the blessings of knowledge, of true liberty, and of pure and undefiled religion throughout the World."⁶⁷²

– JOHN ADAMS, Second President of the United States of America (A.D. 1798)

298) "France, the Papacy, and all other Anti-Christian powers, will vanish like the chaff of the threshing floor before the wind. And the gentle, peaceful Kingdom of the Son of David will be gradually but universally established. By praying 'Thy Kingdom come!' – we hasten its progress.... The subduing of the kingdoms of the World to Christianity will be achieved only by the Holy Spirit and the secret energy of truth, till it shall have eradicated war, slavery, oppression, tyranny, superstition and vice; till antichristian power and influence shall be abolished; till false religion, fake philosophy and despotic government shall be destroyed; till love and peace shall reign, and truth and righteousness shall be established in the Earth."⁶⁷³

– JEREMY BELKNAP, American Historian of Boston (A.D. 1798)

299) "The joint triumphs of enlightened reason and true religion must soon become glorious!"⁶⁷⁴

– JAMES MCKINNEY, Refounder of the Reformed Presbyterian Church in USA (1798)

300) "The knowledge of Jehovah as revealed in Scripture (Isaiah 11:6-9), is the most valuable of all knowledge. It is not an intellectual, speculative or cold knowledge – but "the saving practical knowledge" spread by preaching as applied by the Spirit. Only when this knowledge becomes universal, will the Millennium dawn – for it will act as a leaven on life and culture in general."⁶⁷⁵

– JOHN FINDLAY, British Preacher and Theologian (A.D. 1799)

301) “The Spirit of promise draws the picture of a **whole Earth** thick set with living **converts**, like the sky bespangled with stars. It is a crowd, every individual of which appears rich with divine glory.... The subject has enough in it, if brought home by the Spirit of truth, revelation and power, to form those Missionaries against whom the gates of hell shall not prevail.... Those gloomy [shores] -- those burning shores -- shall become, sooner or later, a part of the triumphal ornaments of the Christian Church.”⁶⁷⁶

– **JOHN LOVE**, First Secretary of the London Missionary Society (A.D. 1802)

302) “John [in Revelation 14:6] foresaw a period when a **zealous Ministry** would arise in the midst of the churches with a new and extraordinary spirit; a Ministry singular in its views and exertions and remarkable for its plans and success; a Ministry which would arrest the public attention and be a prelude to momentous changes in the Church and in the World.” This corps of Ministers will carry the Gospel to the most remote corners of the World on a scale and with a zeal unprecedented in the history of the Church.”⁶⁷⁷

– **JOHN HENRY LIVINGSTON**, American Preacher in New York (A.D. 1804)

303) “Animated...by a spirit of philanthropy, and real faith in the Scriptures of truth, we have not beheld the state of our Jewish brethren with careless indifference.... We have judged it our duty to endeavour to excite renewed and solemn investigation of those Sacred Oracles which we profess alike to receive, whether Jews or Christians.

“We feel it of the last importance to our own souls to know the true Jehovah and the Messiah. He is the sum and substance of all the prophecies and promises -- and in Whom alone all the nations of the Earth shall be blessed.”⁶⁷⁸

– **HENRY HUNTER**, British Preachers and Theologians (A.D. 1806)

304) “Yes, the time will come and ‘will not tarry’ – when the pagan idolater shall ‘cast his idols to the moles and to the bats’; when the Indian powwows shall be silenced by the songs of Zion; when the Vedas of the Hindu, the Shasters of the Gentoo, and the Koran of the Mohametan, shall be exchanged for the Holy Bible; when the religion of Brahma, the Institutes of Menu, the rites of the Lama, the Zend of Zoroaster, and even the laws of Confucius shall be superseded by ‘the glorious Gospel of the blessed God!’”⁶⁷⁹

– ABIEL HOLMES, American Preacher and Missiologist (A.D. 1808)

305) “It is my opinion that God will ere long visit New South Wales with His heavenly grace. Out of these stones, He will raise up children unto Abraham.

“There has not been any shaking yet among the dry bones. But the son of man is commanded to prophesy, and I hope by and by the Lord will command the wind to blow. Stir up Thy strength, O God, and come amongst us!”⁶⁸⁰

– SAMUEL MARSDEN, Australian Governor’s Chaplain and Magistrate in NSW (1811)

306) “Now is the time for the followers of Christ to come forward boldly, and engage earnestly in the great work of enlightening and reforming mankind. Never was the glory of the Christian religion more clearly discernible.

“Never was the futility of all other schemes more manifest. Never were the encouragements to benevolent exertion greater – than at the present day.”⁶⁸¹

– AMERICAN BOARD OF COMMISSIONERS FOR FOREIGN MISSIONS (1812)

307) “All nations and people will praise and fear God, and He will bless them and make His salvation known among them. Psalm 67. “All the passing events of the civil and religious world, in connection with prophecy, indicate the approach of better days.”

God’s deepest concern in history is for the growth of “the Kingdom of grace” which is centered in the Church. “Human kingdoms and empires will be shaken, and fall. But this Kingdom will grow and increase.”⁶⁸²

– LEONARD WOODS, American Professor of Theology at Andover (A.D. 1812)

308) “Many are the prophetic signs which declare the rapid approach of that [millennial] day. Babylon the great is fallen. The false prophet is hastening to perdition.

“That wicked one hath appeared, whom the Lord will destroy by the Breath of His Mouth and the

brightness of His coming [Second Thessalonians 2]. The day of His vengeance is wasting the Earth. The last vial of the wrath of God is running [Revelation 16].

“The angel having the everlasting Gospel to preach to men, has begun his flight -- and with trumpet sounding long and waxing loud, is calling to the **nations** to look unto Jesus and be **saved**. Soon **will** the responsive song be heard from **every** nation and kindred and tongue and people, as the voice of a **great multitude** and as the voice of many waters and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying: ‘Alleluiah; for the Lord God Omnipotent **reigneth!**’”⁶⁸³

– **LYMAN BEECHER**, Presbyterian Preacher of Litchfield, Connecticut (A.D. 1812)

309) “**Arise**, O God, and shine – in all Thy saving might,
and **prosper** each design to spread Thy glorious light!
Let healing streams of mercy flow, that **all** the Earth Thy truth may know!”

“Bring distant nations near to sing Thy glorious praise!
Let **ev’ry** people hear and learn Thy holy ways!
Reign, mighty God; assert Thy cause; and govern by Thy righteous Laws!”

“Send forth Thy glorious pow’r, that Gentiles **all** may see
and Earth present her store in converts born to Thee.
God, our own God, Thy Church O bless – and **fill** the **World** with
righteousness!”

“To God, the only wise, the one immortal King,
let hallelujahs rise from **ev’ry** living thing!
Let **all** that breathe on **ev’ry** coast – praise Father, Son and Holy Ghost!”⁶⁸⁹

– **WILLIAM HURN**, Famous Hymnwriter (A.D, 1813)

310) “At the Congress of Vienna, Alexander the First of Russia, Francis the First of Austria, and Frederick William the Third of Prussia pledged themselves “both in the administration of their respective states and in their political relations with **every** other government, to take for their **sole** guide the precepts of justice, **Christian charity**, and peace – the precepts of that Holy Religion which, far from being applicable only in private concerns, must have an immediate influence on the councils of princes and guide all their steps as being the only means of consolidating human institutions and remedying their imperfection.” At the same time, they admonished their subjects, “as the sole means of enjoying that peace which arises from a good conscience and which alone is durable – to **strengthen** themselves every day more and **more** in the principles and exercise of the duties which the divine **Saviour** has taught **mankind**.”⁶⁸⁵

– THE HOLY ALLIANCE between Russian, Austria, and Prussia (A.D. 1815)

311) “It has long been the idle expectation of many persons that the Millennium, in their sense, was at hand.... Yet there is no doubt that the Earth is in a state of progressive moral improvement; and that the light of true religion is shining more copiously everywhere -- and will shine more and more [un]to the perfect day [Proverbs 4:18].

“But when the religion of Christ will be at its meridian of light and heat -- we know not.... I am satisfied that this period [Revelation chapter twenty] should not be taken literally. It may signify that there shall be a long and undisturbed state of Christianity; and so universally shall the Gospel spirit prevail, that it will appear as if Christ reigned upon the Earth. Which will, in effect, be the case – because His Spirit shall rule in the heart[s] of men.”⁶⁸⁶

– ADAM CLARKE, Famous British Methodist Theologian (A.D. 1816)

312) “The Apostle gives the assurance that the fullness of the Jews – their restoration as a body, when they shall acknowledge Christ as the Messiah – will yet prove a fair blessing to the Gentiles. It will be connected with a calling of the nations to an extent far beyond anything yet witnessed....

“If the casting away of the Jews was such a blessing to the World – their recall will be a blessing unspeakably greater. It will occasion a revival among the Gentile churches, from a dead and almost lifeless state, which will resemble a resurrection. The numbers then converted, will be as if all the dead had risen out of their graves!”⁶⁸⁷

“The World has hitherto groaned under Heathen and Antichristian idolatry. But the time will come when the kingdoms of this World shall become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ. And this will be closely connected with the recovery of the Jews from their unbelief.”⁶⁸⁸

– ROBERT HALDANE, Great Scottish Revivalist of Switzerland (A.D. 1816)

313) “I long to be engaged in the blessed work of saying to the Heathen: ‘Behold, your God!’ Do not think that the future scenes cast me down! No! Behold, I go full of hope!”⁶⁸⁹

– ROBERT MOFFAT, Pioneer Missionary to Southern Africa (A.D. 1816)

314) “The sacred Scriptures assure us of the **universal conquests** of the Redeemer, that ‘His dominion shall **extend** from sea to sea, **even to the ends of the Earth**’; the ‘the kingdoms of this World shall **become** the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ’; and that ‘the isles shall **wait for His Law!**’”⁶⁹⁰

– **BAPTIST MISSIONARY SOCIETY**, in Britain (A.D. 1817)

315) “Salvation! O, salvation! The joyful sound proclaim,
till each **remotest nation** has **learned** Messiah’s Name!

Waft, waft, ye winds, His story – and you, ye waters, roll
till like a sea of glory it **spreads** from **pole** to **pole!**”⁶⁹¹

– **REGINALD HEBER**, Famous Hymnwriter (A.D. 1819)

316) His last words uttered just as Donald Mitchell was passing away, breathed the hope which had guided his steps to India as a Missionary of the Cross: “The **Earth** shall be **full** of [the] **knowledge** of the **Lord!** Amen, and **amen!**”⁶⁹²

– **DONALD MITCHELL**, First Scottish Missionary to India (A.D. 1823)

317) “Our purpose is to trace, through the course of past centuries, lying before us for review, the **growth** of that **mighty tree** which, springing up from the **little** grain of mustard seed, is **destined** to **overshadow** the **Earth**, and under the branches of which **all nations** are to find a safe lodging. The history will show us how a **little leaven**, cast into the **lump** of **humanity**, has **gradually** been leavening **it**....

“The revelations and providences vouchsafed to them [the Old Testament Israelites] were designed for the **whole human race**, over which, from the foundation of her land, **the Kingdom** of God was to be **extended**. Theism and **Theocracy** must be embodied in an outward shape, as something pertaining exclusively to a distinct people, in order that from the shell of this national form there might arise a Kingdom of God which should embrace **all mankind**....

“Christianity was **designed** to be the principle that should rule the **World**.... It was, in short, a principle that aimed at the **transformation** of **all** that existed....

“Montanists did not duly consider the fact that **Christianity**, by beginning with its inward workings, was **to transform** the life of **humanity**.... **Strong** and **certain** was the conviction of the Christians that the Church would come forth **out** of its conflicts -- and, as it was its **destination** to be a **World-transforming** principle, would **attain to dominion** of the **World**.”⁶⁹³

– **AUGUST NEANDER**, German Father of Modern Church History (A.D. 1826)

318) “**Countless millions** are shortly to awake from the sleep and darkness of a hundred ages, to hail the day that will never go down. I see the darkness rolling upon itself and passing away from a thousand lands. I see a cloudless day, following and laying itself over **all the Earth**.”

“I see **the nations** coming up from the neighbourhood of the brutes, to the dignity of the **sons of God** – from the styne in which they had wallowed, to the purity of the divine image. I see the meekness of the Gospel assuaging their ferocious passions, melting down a million contending units into one, silencing the clangor of arms, and swelling into life a thousand budding charities which had died under the long winter.

“I hear the voice of their joy. It swells from the valley, and echoes from the hills. **I already hear on the Eastern breeze, the songs of new-born nations**.... Come that blessed day! Let my eyes only behold the sight; and then give this worthless body to the worms!”⁶⁹⁴

– **EDWARD GRIFFIN**, American President of Williams College (A.D. 1826)

319) “**The Earth** shall be **full of the knowledge of the Lord**, as the waters cover the sea (Isaiah 11:9). There shall be a **binding** of Satan (Revelation 20). **These predictions**, it is evident, have **not yet** been **fulfilled**.”⁶⁹⁵

– **ASAHEL NETTLETON**, Leader of America’s Second Great Awakening (1826)

320) “**With respect to that binding of Satan which immediately precedes the Millennium, it must plainly be considered as a transaction not visible to human eyes. The power of the evil spirit being effectually restrained through the wellnigh universal prevalence of true religion** -- perhaps also his seductive influence being specially coerced by the direct, though unseen, interference of the Almighty -- he [**Satan**] is said, by an easy and natural image, to be **chained fast**.”⁶⁹⁶

– **GEORGE STANLEY FABER**, English Professor at Lincoln (A.D. 1828)

321) “The fall of Turkey [alias Islam] will prepare the way of the Eastern nations.... The fall of Popery will prepare the way of the Western nations to come to the brightness of our Redeemer’s rising in the East” [Revelation 16:10-21 & 17:14 & 19:10-21].”⁶⁹⁷

– **ARCHIBALD MASON**, Scottish Minister at Wishawton (A.D. 1829)

322) Sadly, from this time onward (1829f), -- perhaps through anxiety of the ungodly French Revolution of 1789 and its sinister Napoleonic aftermath -- Neo-Montanistic tongues-speaking and especially “any moment” Rapturism began to infect the Church. The former was spread through Irvingism and Mormonism -- and the latter was destined to spread especially through the influence of Scofieldian Dispensationalism

This was and is the case especially in the United States. Even though, there too, these errors never became quite dominant in any of the mainline ecclesiastical circles (with the possible exception of the Baptists).

These Neo-Montanistic heresies seem to have broken out in early 1830. Then, the disturbed and sick and sometimes-bedridden and soon ‘tongues-speaking’ Margaret Macdonald thought⁶⁹⁸ she saw **a vision** in a trance or “**in spirit** [of] **the Lord coming** in the glory of His Father.”

This, she imagined, was Christ heralding -- that He “maketh us ready for His appearing.” She added: “I believe the time of **Babylon’s destruction draweth nigh.... You also should flee out**, while yet there is **time.... The time of the World’s doom draweth nigh.... The Lord is nigh.**”

Later, Margaret Macdonald added in her hand-written account: “**I saw** it was just the **Lord Himself descending from Heaven** with a shout.... I saw that the glory of the ministration of **the Spirit** had not been known. I repeated frequently...the spiritual temple must and shall be reared [up] and the fullness of Christ **be poured** into His body, and **then shall we be caught up to meet Him....**

“I saw that night, and often since, that there will be **an outpouring of the Spirit....** such as has not been -- a **baptism of fire....** This is what **we are at present made to pray much for** -- that **speedily** we may **all be made ready to meet our Lord in the air....** Jesus wants His bride.... **He that shall come, will come – and will not tarry.**”

This was **the first time in history** that the notion of an **imminent secret rapture** had ever been advocated. Macdonaldism was rightly repudiated by the learned American Premillennial Scholar Dr. Nathaniel West as “the utterly unscriptural, any-moment theory of our Lord’s second

coming: a theory which makes of Christ and His Apostles self-contradictory Teachers, and of the Scriptures wholly unreliable oracles. No delusion more pleasing and sweet on the one hand; or more wild, groundless, and injurious to truth and faith, on the other – has ever captivated the minds of men than this one of an any-moment unseen secret advent, resurrection and rapture; a delusion condemned and exposed on almost every page of the Word of God.”⁶⁹⁹

Yet Margaret Macdonald’s 1830 errors, in part or in whole, nevertheless immediately spread to J.N. Darby and Plymouth Brethrenism,⁷⁰⁰ and to Mormonism.⁷⁰¹ Within two decades, they had tarnished also William Miller and Seventh-day Adventism;⁷⁰² and several years later, also Russellism alias the views of the so-called Jehovah witnesses. They were then popularized by the **dispensationalistic** Scofield Reference Bible, by Classic Pentecostalism, by J.F. Walvoord,⁷⁰³ and by Hal Lindsey.⁷⁰⁴ Consequently, these views are now epidemic in most Baptist and Pentecostalist and Neo-Charismatic Churches (especially in the U.S.) – though, thank God – not so epidemic anywhere else.

For, over against Macdonaldistic Rapturism and Tongues-speaking, the Reformational Protestant Churches in general and the Presbyterian and Reformed Churches in particular -- continued to stand fast. “Be it resolved...that the Presbyterian Church in the United States is a Missionary Society, the **object** of which is to aid in the **conversion** of the **World**; and that every Member of the Church is a Member for life of said Society – and bound, in maintenance of his Christian character, to do all in his power for the accomplishment of this objective.”⁷⁰⁵

-- **JOHN HOLT RICE**, First Professor at Union Seminary, Va., U.S.A. (A.D. 1830)

323) “We also rejoice in **hope**. We have **many** and express **assurances** in the Scriptures, which cannot be broken, of the general, the **universal spread and reign of Christianity** – which are **not yet accomplished**. Nothing has yet taken place in the history of divine grace -- wide enough in extent, durable enough in continuance, powerful enough in energy, blessed enough in enjoyment, magnificent enough in glory – to do anything like justice to these predictions and promises. **Better days, therefore are before us** – notwithstanding the forebodings of many.”⁷⁰⁶

Writing to the renowned slave-abolitionist William Wilberforce: “I rejoice, my dear Sir, that a person of your consideration is in the healthful number of those who, notwithstanding the contemptuous denial of some, and the gloomy forebodings of others, believe that real religion has been **advancing**, and is spreading, and **will continue to spread** – till, without any disruption of the present system, ‘the Earth shall be **filled** with the knowledge of the Lord as the waters cover the sea: for the mouth of the Lord hath spoken it!’...

“If we are not to be weary well-doing [Galatians 6:9], we need not only exhortation, but **hope** – which is at once the most active as well as the most cheerful principle. Nothing so unnerves energy and slackens diligence, as despondency.”⁷⁰⁷

-- **WILLIAM JAY**, English Minister at Bath (A.D. 1831)

324) “The Church of Christ, though long militant ‘against spiritual wickedness in high places,’ shall – according to the Scriptures – become **even on Earth** finally **triumphant**. And it is not merely from the analogy of the truth of the past that the certainly of the events yet **future** may be **confided** in....

“The ‘appointed time,’ whatever convulsions may yet intervene, is approximating when despotism and superstition shall come to an end and when brutal powers or governments fitly symbolized by wild beasts shall cease to trample on the liberties of man. The powers of darkness are already shaken.

He whose ‘look was more stout than his fellows’ [viz. the **Antichrist** or Daniel’s eleventh horn of the **Roman Empire**] has been greatly humbled. His dominion has in part been taken away; and it will be consumed and destroyed until the **end** [Daniel 7].”⁷⁰⁹

– ALEXANDER KEITH, Scottish Minister of Kincardine (A.D. 1834)

325) “As the new dispensation is **universal in intention**, no part of the human race being excepted in the Apostolic Commission – so we believe that it will be universal **in fact**. However improbable it may seem that the **whole World** should be **Christianized** – we know that God is able to perform what He has promised!

“The great revolution commenced immediately after our Saviour’s ascension. And although for ages it was stationary, or rather retrograde, it has been **advancing** since the era of the **Reformation**, and is going on in our days with renovated **vigour**.

“A future generation will witness the **rapidity** of its **progress**, And long before the end of time, ‘the knowledge of the Lord will cover the Earth as the waters cover the sea’ [Isaiah 11]... Christianity will gain a **complete triumph** over all false religions. And the visible kingdom of Satan will be destroyed or reduced within narrow limits during the **happy** period when in the figurative language of the Apocalypse [Revelation 20] ‘he shall be bound.’”⁷⁰⁹

– JOHN DICK, Systematic Theologian in Scotland (A.D. 1834)

326) “If the **Church** will do all her duty, the Millennium may come in this country in three years.... If the Church would do **all** her **duty**, she would **soon** complete the **triumph of religion** in the **World**.”⁷¹⁰

– **CHARLES G. FINNEY**, American Professor and Revivalist (A.D. 1835)

327) The fall of the Papal Antichrist “is fast approaching.” The time is near when the Lord will “pour down His Holy Spirit. And the kingdoms of this World will become the Kingdom of our Lord [Revelation 11:30].”

– **ALEXANDER MCLEOD**, Reformed Presbyterian Minister in New York (A.D. 1836)

328) “Israel will give life to the dead World.... Just as we have found, among the parched hills of Judah, that the evening dew, coming silently down, gave life to every plant, making the grass to spring [forth] and the flowers to put forth their sweetest fragrance – so shall converted Israel be, when they come as dew upon a dead, dry World.

“The remnant of Jacob shall be in the midst of many people – as a dew from the Lord; as the showers upon the grass that tarrieth not for man nor waiteth for the sons of men.’ Micah 5:7.”⁷¹¹

– **ROBERT MURRAY M’CHEYNE**, Scottish Minister at Dundee (A.D. 1849)

329) “The doctrine I hold in relation to the Millennium, and for which I think I am indebted to the Bible is – that the reign of Christ on Earth will not be a personal [or visible] but a spiritual reign; that it will be preceded by the overthrow of Papacy, Mohammadanism, Paganism, and all false systems; [and] that it will consist in the universal prevalence of righteousness and true holiness, throughout the whole World.”

– **JOHN DOWLING**, American Baptist Minister in New York City (A.D. 1840)

330) “I am a poor sinner who has worked hard, and had constantly before my mind one great object – the conversion of the World.”⁷¹²

– **JOHN BRECKINRIDGE**, Kentucky-born American Preacher (A.D. 1840)

331) The Gospel “light and truth will go forth conquering, and to conquer. Papists, infidels, Jews, and nominal ‘Christians’ must all yield to its divine energy – or be broken in[to] pieces like a potter’s vessel!”⁷¹³

– **JOSHUA WILSON**, American Presbyterian Preacher (A.D. 1841)

332) Pray for: “the conversion of God’s ancient people...which is to take place until [or before] the coming of Christ; the outpouring of the Spirit on all flesh; the destruction of Antichrist; the utter abolition of idolatry; the universal overthrow of Satan’s kingdom; the universal diffusion of the Gospel and its blessings!”⁷¹⁴

“Stretching beyond all these great events connected with the **glory of the latter day**, believers should look forward to the kingdom of glory itself – and pray for the coming of that day when Christ shall be revealed in flaming fire....

“Habitually desiring the coming of the Lord, we shall be naturally led to **abound in prayer for the accomplishment of those objects which** we have every reason, from the Word of God, to believe **must be fulfilled before that great final event takes place.** Glorious things are spoken of the state of the Church in the latter day!”⁷¹⁵

– **ROBERT WODROW JR.**, Great Church of Scotland Missiologist (A.D. 1841)

333) To his wife, Mrs. David Livingstone: “I will go [as a Missionary to Central Africa], no matter who opposes. I know you wish as ardently as I can, that all the World may be filled with the glory of the Lord.”⁷¹⁶

“I am trying now to establish the Lord’s Kingdom in a region wider by far than Scotland. Fever seems to forbid. But I shall work for the glory of Christ’s Kingdom – fever, or no fever.”⁷¹⁷

“A good and attentive audience. But, immediately after the service, I found the chief had returned into a hut to drink beer.... A Minister who had not seen so much pioneer service as I have done, would have been shocked to see so little effect produced by an earnest discourse concerning the future judgment. But time must be given to allow the truth to sink into the dark mind, and produce its effect. The Earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the glory of the Lord – that is enough. We can afford to work in faith. For Omnipotence is pledged to fulfil the promise.”⁷¹⁸

“A quiet audience today. The seed being sown, the least of all seeds now, but it will grow

[into] a **mighty tree**.. It is as it were a small stone cut out of a mountain. But **it will fill the whole Earth** [Daniel 2]. He that believeth, shall not make haste.... The dregs of Heathenism still cleave fast to the minds of the majority. They have settled deep down into their souls. And one century will not be sufficient to elevate them to the ranks of Christians in Britain.”⁷¹⁹

“Missionaries in the midst of masses of Heathenism seem like voices crying in the wilderness – Reformers, before the Reformation. **Future Missionaries will see conversions follow every sermon.**

“We prepare the way for them. May they not forget the pioneers who worked in the thick gloom with few rays to cheer -- except such as flow from faith in God’s promises! **We work for a glorious future which we are not destined to see.** We are only morning-stars, shining in the dark. **But the glorious morn will break.**”⁷²⁰

“Missionaries do not live before their time. Their great **idea of converting the World to Christ, is no chimera**: it is divine. **Christianity will triumph!** It is equal to all it has to perform.”⁷²¹

– **DAVID LIVINGSTONE**, Pioneer Missionary in Central Africa (A.D. 1841)

334) “And **He will overturn, and overturn, and overturn** – till intemperance and war and oppression of every kind, **Popery, and Mahometanism, and Judaism**, ...all those multiform evils which now afflict the Earth and insult the Heavens, **shall be out of the way.**”⁷²²

– **ENOCH POND**, Renowned American Eschatologist (A.D. 1843)

335) “After the fatal stroke is given, and the whore of Babylon destroyed, **the progress of the Gospel will be increasingly rapid.** Satan will be chained for the thousand years, and **the Gospel will go forth ‘conquering and to conquer.’** **Papists, Infidels, and Jews must all yield** to its divine energy. Churches built upon error will tumble to ruin, and their errors be purged. And **the “Gospel [shall be] extended over all the face of the Earth.**”⁷²³

– **JOHN ROBINSON**, American Preacher and Theologian (A.D. 1843)

336) “See Jehovah’s banner furled, sheathed His sword; He speaks – ‘tis done and the kingdoms of the World are the kingdoms of His Son! **He shall reign from pole to pole** with illimitable sway.”⁷²⁴

“O fear not, faint not, halt not now! In Jesus’ Name, be strong!
To Him shall all the nations bow, and sing with you this song:
‘Uplifted are the gates of brass; the bars of iron yield.
Behold the King of Glory pass – the cross has won the field!’”⁷²⁵

– JAMES MONTGOMERY, Famous Hymnwriter (A.D. 1843)

337) “The result of the overthrow of Antichrist, will be the establishment upon Earth of the glorious Kingdom of Christ. As the destruction of the Jewish temple and the dispersion of the Jewish nation were to precede the universal spread of the Gospel, and seemed necessary to its general reception – so the overturning of this nominally Christian but really Antichristian power appears to be demanded in the providence of God, to the general enlightenment of the World....

“Thus will the downfall of Popery be the signal for the universal triumph of pure Christianity.... Scattered Jews will in the mean time, be regathered. And Jew and Gentile – yea, a ransomed World – will rejoice in Him Who is the ‘Alpha and the Omega, the First and the Last.’”⁷²⁶

– SAMUEL CASSELS, Minister in Norfolk, Virginia (A.D. 1846)

338) “The Prophet [in Isaiah 2:2-4] sees the Church, at some distant period, **exalted** and conspicuous, and the **nations** resorting to it for instruction in the True Religion, as a consequence of which he sees wars cease and **universal peace prevail.**”⁷²⁷

– JOSEPH ADDISON ALEXANDER, American Professor at Princeton (A.D. 1848)

339) “The Spirit in the hand of Christ, and the Word in the hand of the Spirit -- as they are the present agency for converting sinners and perfecting saints and **advancing the Redeemer’s Kingdom in the World** – so they are all that we are taught to ascribe the glories of the latter day to. And quite enough!

“That these spiritual glorious are not now irradiating the World – that they have not long ago chased away the darkness with which the usurping ‘god of this world’ has been permitted to cover it -- is owing to no defect in the present resources of the Church and of the economy under which it is placed. That more fidelity on the Church’s part would have hastened the predicted consummation – is language which we are fully warranted in using. But He to Whom ‘are known all His works from the beginning of the World’ – has ordered the ‘times and the seasons’

in such mysterious correspondence with the faithlessness of His Church, as to bring out in affecting relief His Own sole glory in the long promised subjugation of the **World to Christ**...

“There is a satisfaction unspeakable in anticipating the endless ways in which the Spirit may get Himself renown, by what He will yet do in and by the Church – how under His mighty working the instrumentalities for spreading the Gospel may be seen indefinitely **multiplying**; all the missionary principle and energy of a Church, quickened from the base torpor of ages previous, evolving themselves even to their own astonishment; majestic steps in Providence startling men from their stupid slumbers, awing their spirits, and constraining their attention to long-despised truths. These and other such things, in connection with direct and copious effusions of the Spirit, the heart delights to think of as destined to effect that **universal submission** to the sceptre of Christ which is to characterise the latter day.”⁷²⁸

“The **growing** character of the Kingdom [according to Matthew 13] taught by the ‘mustard seed’ – and the **penetrating** and assimilating character, taught by ‘the leaven’ –go on till ‘the **whole** [Earth] is leavened’ and all the World’s **nations** have been brought to lodge in the branches of the mighty tree of life.”⁷²⁹

“If an event so untoward as **Israel’s** fall was the occasion of such unspeakable good [as the salvation of the Gentiles] -- may we [not] expect an event so blessed as their **full recovery** to be **productive**[?!].... The import[ance] of these remarkable words [in Romans 11:11-15] seems to be that the reception [back] of the whole family of Israel, scattered as they are among all nations under heaven, and the most inveterate enemies of the Lord Jesus – will be such a stupendous manifestation of the power of God upon the spirits of men and of His glorious presence with heralds of the Cross as will not only kindle devout astonishment far and wide but so change the dominant mode of thinking on all spiritual things as to seem like a resurrection from the dead [cf. too Romans 11:25-32]....

“Suffice it here to hold up the **all-vivifying** effect of this great revolution upon the character and the faith of a whole nation – the nation [of Israel] whose life of some four thousand years’ duration, studded with Miracle and Prophecy and Retribution -- shall at length blaze forth with ‘Mercy built up for ever and Faithfulness established in the very Heavens!’

“While the spectacle cannot fail to penetrate and arouse all thinking Christendom – the active life and quick intelligence and ubiquitous movements of a nation proverbial for these qualities, now [to be] consecrated to higher ends, must make themselves felt **everywhere**, to the encouragement and the joy of all the children of God and to the ingathering of **multitudes** to **swell the ranks** of the **redeemed**.”⁷³⁰

– **DAVID BROWN**, Scottish Professor at Aberdeen (A.D. 1849)

340) “The **abundance** of the **sea** shall be **converted** unto thee, the forces of the **Gentiles** will come unto thee!’ The ocean is now bearing on its waters to the most distant lands, the news of

salvation. The Missionary is going, to tell the distant Heathen of Christ Who came to seek and to save them which were lost. The Bible is going to them – to shed its benign and elevated influences on lands dark and wretched, in moral midnight and degradation...and is preparing rapidly the way for the universal spread of Christianity.”⁷³¹

– **E.P. ROGERS**, Southern Presbyterian Pastor and Writer (A.D. 1850)

341) “It were a painful thing to look down the vale of time and see the same divisions, errors, worldliness and feebleness ever within the Church; the same **Paganism, Mohammedanism, Judaism and Popery** around it; and no visions of better things advancing to supplant these scenes of the moral world.

“If what we **have** seen or read, is **all** that Christianity is to do for our race – if the **World** is never to be **converted** to Christ, nor the Church brought into a nearer conformity to the New Testament -- then would infidelity triumph and exultingly affirm that the Son of God had not destroyed the works of the devil [and] that the Gospel had been partially and to a great extent a failure, and therefore was a fable.

“We have no apprehension that such a ground of triumph will **ever** be given to the enemies of our Faith! A **brighter** era is **destined** to **arrive**. A **golden** age is to dawn upon us when the predictions of Prophets and the descriptions of Apostles are all to be fulfilled, and the **Earth** be **full** of the **knowledge** of the **Lord**.”⁷³²

– **JOHN ANGELL JAMES**, British Minister at Birmingham (A.D. 1850)

342) ““Then shall the **Earth** yield her **increase** – and God, even our own God, shall bless us.’ Psalm 66:6. **Plenty** is the natural consequence of the moral change which takes place in the World at the **Millennium**. The **universal righteousness** of that **happy period** will prevent -- despotism in government; anarchy in the people; as well as the devastations of war by which the Earth is left uncultivated or its produce is destroyed. The religion of that period will **civilise savages** and destroy among civilised nations the numerous occupations that minister to the lawless passions of men – thus direction a **great multitude** of the human race to the useful arts of agriculture.”⁷³³

– **JAMES FRASER**, English Bishop of Manchester (A.D. 1850)

343) “Then shall it come to pass that the veil of ignorance, which hath so long spread over the nations, shall be destroyed.... For Babylon shall fall, Satan be bound, and Christ will reign, and

truth and righteousness universally prevail a thousand years.”⁷³⁴

– **ALEXANDER CAMPBELL**, American Founder of the “Disciples” (A.D. 1850)

344) “Christianity has, indeed, **always** proposed to herself the **subjugation of the World**. But she had practically fallen back from her undertaking – not knowing the extent or character of her fields. Gradually these were opening upon her -- until about the commencement of the present century when the command of Christ interpreted by modern discoveries began to work in the heart of the Church. This, though as yet far from assuming the place and creating the movement it ought, is still to be regarded as the central idea. Everything tends to show that **this** is to be the ultimate result of God’s plan.”⁷³⁵

– **MARK HOPKINS**, President of Williams College, Massachusetts (A.D. 1851)

345) “It pleased Almighty God, in His great and undeserved mercy, to **reform this Church from Popery**, by Presbyters.... **Nations and their Rulers are bound to own the truth of God, and to advance the Kingdom of His Son....** How signally God opened for her in her new position both a door of utterance and a door of entrance not only in this but in other countries also..., this Church cannot but most devoutly acknowledge....

“In deep humiliation, therefore, but at the same time in the holy boldness of faith unfeigned, [we are]...resolved and determined, as in the sight and by the help of God, to prosecute the needs contemplated from the beginning in all the acts and deeds of her reforming fathers -- until the errors which they renounced shall have disappeared from the land and the true system which they upheld shall be so universally received that the whole people rightly instructed in the Faith shall unite to glorify God.”⁷³⁶

– **ACT AND DECLARATION OF THE FREE CHURCH OF SCOTLAND** (1851)

346) “Believers are expressly represented as sharers in the victory; and they must also be regarded as sharers in the conflict.... The words ‘King of kings and Lord of lords’ point [to] the foundation of Christ’s victory. The Lamb conquers because He is the Lord of lords; **believers conquer because they are with the Lamb....** Promises of **victory** given to the Christian Church...pass into **fulfilment** – first when Rome is overthrown by **the ten kings**, and then when they themselves are overcome by the Lamb and are **received** into the bosom of the **Christian Church....**

“‘And I saw an Angel come down from Heaven, Who had the key of the abyss and a great chain.... And he seized...Satan and bound him a thousand years’.... What is here [in Revelation 20] undertaken against Satan -- stands in the closest connection with what has been said before [in Revelation 19:19-20] respecting the ten kings and the Beast.... The dominion of the God-opposing principle was broken in **the ten kings**, partly through severe judgments of God (chapter 19:11-21), partly through the peaceful mission of the Church (chapter 17:14 [cf. 19:21]). They have renounced their enmity against God and Christ and the Church; and by reason of their having taken on them the yoke of Christ, the Beast too has retired from the stage [cf. 19:20 & 20:10].... ‘Resist the devil, and he will flee from you’ (James 4:7), etc. If the Earth were to watch and pray for a thousand years, Satan should have nothing on it.”⁷³⁷

– **E.W. HENGSTENBERG**, German Professor of Theology in Berlin (A.D. 1851)

347) The papal ‘Little Horn’ is still opposing the ‘rise and progress of Christ’s Kingdom.’ But the saints **will** take over **universal** dominion. Christ’s present **Stone Kingdom** is to **overcome and destroy** all opposing powers and **literally fill the Earth.**

“It is vain to say this prophecy has been fulfilled in any general spread of the Gospel – past or present.” The Stone has not yet become the mountain. The image will be destroyed by the Stone before the Stone becomes the mountain.”⁷³⁸

– **ELIAS BURDICK**, American Preacher and Theologian (A.D. 1852)

348) “Oh, what promises are ours, if we had only faith to grasp them! What a promise is that in the Great Commission – ‘Go and do so; and lo I am with you, even to the end of the World!’ We go forth amongst the hundreds of millions of the nations. We find gigantic systems of idolatry and superstition consolidated for 3000 years, heaped up and multiplied for ages upon ages until they tower as high mountains mightier than the Himalaya.... But what does faith say? Believe, and it shall be! And if any Church on Earth can realize that faith – to that Church will the honour belong of evangelizing the nations, and bringing down the mountains....

“Let us press forward – resolved that we shall not desist or pause in our onward cause and career of victory till it [the crown of Christ] be triumphantly planted on the last citadel of the hitherto unconquered realms of Heathenism.”⁷³⁹ “Never for a moment lose sight of the grand ulterior object for which the Church was originally constituted and spiritual rights and privileges conferred – viz. the conversion of the World.”⁷⁴⁰

– **ALEXANDER DUFF**, Scottish Preacher and Founder of Calcutta University (1854)

349) “Next to the hope of personal salvation, is the hope of the conversion of the World. No doubt, there will be some wicked men till the end of time. But the time is coming when they will be the rare exception to the general rule.”⁷⁴¹

– JOHN G. SHEPPERSON, Presbyterian Pastor in Virginia (A.D. 1858)

350) “I built the grave [for his wife Mrs. Paton and her baby son on the heathen island of Tanna in the New Hebrides now known as Vanuatu] round and round with coral blocks, and covered the top with beautiful white coral, broken small as gravel.... That spot became my sacred and much-frequented shrine, during all the following months and years when I laboured on for the salvation of these savage islanders amidst difficulties, dangers and deaths.

“Whensoever Tanna turns to the Lord and is won for Christ, men in after-days will find the memory of that spot still green – where with ceaseless prayers and tears I claimed that land for God in which I had ‘buried my dead’ with faith and hope.”⁷⁴²

– JOHN G. PATON, Pioneer Missionary from Scotland to the South Pacific (A.D. 1858)

351) “It is our further will and pleasure that you to the utmost of your power promote religion and education among the native inhabitants of our said Colony, or of the lands and islands thereto adjoining.... Especially take care to protect them in their persons and in the free enjoyment of their possessions..... Do by all lawful means prevent and restrain all violence and injustice which may in any manner be practised or attempted against them.... **Take such measure as may appear to you to be necessary for their conversion to the Christian Faith** and for their advancement in civilization.”⁷⁴³

– QUEEN VICTORIA, Instruction to the Governor of Queensland in Australia (1859)

352) “The Holy Spirit is the ever-living and ever-active Teacher and Sanctifier of souls. In the strength of this truth, we can face all difficulties and rise above all discouragements; and stand unmoved amidst the mockery of the World; and preach the Gospel with confidence of ultimate success.”⁷⁴⁴

– JAMES BUCHANAN, Scottish Professor at Edinburgh (A.D. 1860)

353) “Psalm 2:8. ‘Ask of Me.’ That is, of God. This is a part of the ‘decree’ or purpose, as mentioned in verse 7. That decree embraced not only the design [of God the Father] to constitute Him [the Messiah] as His Son in the sense that He was to be[come] King in Zion, but also the purpose to give Him a dominion embracing ‘the Heathen’ and ‘the uttermost parts of the Earth.’ This wide dominion was to be given Him, on condition that He would ‘ask’ for it.... As we may be sure that the Messiah will [or would] ask for this – it follows that the World will yet be brought under His scepter.”⁷⁴⁵

“Prophecy [Daniel 7:25-27] authorizes us to anticipate a time when there shall be a **general prevalence** of true religion: when **the power in the World shall be in the hands of good men** -- of men fearing God..... [Then,] **Divine Laws shall be obeyed.... The civil institutions of the World shall be pervaded by religion....**

“In fact, **the reigning [alias the then-dominant] power on Earth** -- shall be the Kingdom of the Messiah.... [Meantime,] by the certain assurance that such a period **will** come -- we should be **cheered**, amidst all the moral darkness that [now] exists in the World.”⁷⁴⁶

Is it [in Romans 11] the design of God that the Jews should totally and irrecoverably be cast off?.... The expression to ‘stumble’...does not mean to fall down to the ground or to fall so that a man may not recover himself – but to strike the foot against an obstacle; to be arrested in going.... To ‘fall’ [on the other hand,] expresses that state when a man...cannot recover himself.... The Apostle shows that this last was **not** the way in which the Jews had fallen.... They were not to be cast off for ever -- but that occasion was taken...to introduce the Gentiles to the privileges of the Gospel, and then they [**the Jews**] should be **restored**....

“If the temple **had** remained; **if** the [Hebrew] nation had continued to **flourish** – it would have been long before they would have been effectually detached from those rites..... [‘Through their fall, salvation has come to the Gentiles --] for to provoke them [the Jews] to **jealousy**.... [The diminishing of them, (be) the riches (or **enrichment**) of the World]’.... The word ‘riches’ means...abundance of property....

“[This removal of the Jews was] the means of conferring important blessing on the Gentiles. ‘How **much more** their **fullness** [-- when the Jews are restored]!.... Here it...evidently means their **complete restoration**...when the energy and zeal of the Jewish nation shall united with the efforts of others in spreading the knowledge of the true Messiah....

“If the Jewish people should be converted to the Christian Faith, they would have facilities for spreading the truth which the Church has never had.... (1) They are scattered in all nations, and have access to all people. (2) **Their conversion**...would have all the power and influence of **a miracle performed, in view of all nations**.... (3) They are **familiar with the languages of the World**, and their conversion would **at once** establish many [Hebrew] Christian Missionaries in **the heart of all** the kingdoms of **the World**. It would be kindling at once a thousand lights in all the dark parts of the Earth. (4) The Jews have shown that they are eminently fitted to spread the True Religion. It was by Jews converted to Christianity that the Gospel was first

spread....

“If the casting them off...was nevertheless overruled so as to produce important benefits in the spread of the Gospel – how much more may we expect **will be accomplished by their conversion**...to produce an important influence on mankind?.... Their **return** [to God] will have a **direct** tendency to spread it...[as] life from the dead.... When the Jews should be restored...the effect should be felt in the **[re]conversion** also of the **Gentile World**....

“The Apostle fixed his eye on a **future conversion of the Jews to the Gospel**, and expected that their conversion would precede the universal [re-]conversion of the Gentiles.... There could be no event that would make so immediate and decided an impression on the Pagan World, as the conversion of the Jews. They are scattered everywhere. They have access to all people. They understand all languages....

“‘[Blindness, in part, has happened to Israel] – until the fullness of the Gentiles [be come in]’.... The word ‘fullness’...means, until the abundance or the great multitude of the Gentiles shall be converted to God... The Scriptures have spoken of a time when the Gospel shall spread and prevail among the nations of the Earth.... The **conversion of the Jews** will have an important influence in **extending** the Gospel among **the Gentiles**.... This blindness [of Israel] is to continue until great numbers of the Gentiles shall be converted.... The Gospel shall be extensively spread; and **then the conversion of the Jews will be a part of the rapid spread of the Gospel**, and will be among the most efficient and important aids in **completing** the work....

“Christians may labour...with the **expectation** that the **conversion** of the **Jews** and **Gentiles** will not be separate, independent, and distinct events.... The word ‘fullness’ may denote such a general turning to God, without affirming that each individual shall be thus converted.... [Yet] the plan [is] of salvation by grace. ‘Them all’ [means] both Jews and Gentiles.... When therefore this profound and wonderful plan is contemplated..., no wonder that the Apostle was fixed in admiration of the amazing wisdom of Him Who devised it and Who has made **all** events subservient to its establishment and spread among men!”⁷⁴⁷ Romans 11:11-26

“The design of this vision [in Revelation chapter 14] is...to sustain the courage and the Faith of the Church -- in the persecutions and trials which were yet to come -- by the assurance that the Gospel would ultimately be **triumphant**.... The Gospel is to be preached to all men as on an equality.... It is implied also that, at the time referred, this **will** be done. **When** that time will be, the writer does not intimate, farther than that it would be **after** the Beast and his adherents had attempted to stay its progress....

“For the fulfilment of this, therefore, we are to look to a period **subsequent** to the rise and **fall** of that great **Antichristian power** symbolized by the Beast.... It is not, I suppose, Rome considered as **Pagan** that is here meant -- but Rome considered, as the prolongation of the ancient power, in the **Papal** form.

“Alike in this book and in Daniel, Rome -- Pagan and Papal -- is regarded as **one** power, standing in direct opposition to the Gospel of Christ; resisting its progress in the World; and preventing its final prevalence.... When that **falls** -- the last enemy of the Church will be destroyed, and the

final **triumph of the True Religion** will be speedy and complete.”

This is “designed to hold out the symbols of **ultimate and certain victory**.... The hundred and forty-four thousand on Mount Zion, as emblematic of the final **triumph** of the redeemed, have the Father's Name in their foreheads.... They sing a **song of victory**” and have “the vision of the **final triumph** of the Gospel.... The Gospel **will** thus be preached among **all Nations**.... Babylon the mighty Antichristian power...**is** overthrown.”

Barnes, in his comment on Revelation chapter seventeen, describes: “The final **overthrow** of all the enemies of the Church.... To this, all things are tending. This will certainly be accomplished, in due time....

“This whole chapter therefore is designed to relieve...the mind...[to] be cheered with the assurance of the **final triumph** of truth and righteousness.... To the Church at large in the darkest times...there is the **certainty of final victory**.... This should be allowed to cheer and sustain the soul.”

In his *Analysis and Commentary* on Revelation chapter eighteen, Barnes continues: “This chapter may be regarded as...designed to show the **effect** of pouring out the seventh vial...on the formidable Antichristian power so often referred to.... **Papal Rome...will be reduced to a state of utter desolation**, resembling that of the real Babylon.... It is the **Papacy**, represented under the image of the city, and having its seat there. **That** is to be destroyed as utterly as was Babylon of old....

“It refers to Papal Rome, and is designed to describe the final overthrow of that formidable **Antichristian** power.... The **Reformation** was in entire accordance with what God would have His People do.... **His People** are expressly commanded to ‘**come out of her**, so that they might not be partakers of her sin nor of her plagues’....

“The Church has never performed a duty more manifestly in accordance with the Divine will -- and more indispensable for its own purity, prosperity, and safety -- than the act of separating entirely and for ever from Papal Rome. The Reformation was a great movement in human affairs. It was the index of great progress already reached, and the pledge of still greater.... Just in proportion as the principles of the Reformation are acted on -- the destiny of mankind is **onward**....

“The fall of papal Rome...will remove one of the last obstructions to the final triumph of the Gospel.... In chapter 16:10-16, we saw that **one** great hindrance to the spread of the True Religion would be taken away by the **decline and fall** of the Turkish power [meaning that **of Islam**].

“A still more formidable hindrance will be taken away by **the decline and fall of the Papal power**.... When this power shall finally cease, any one can see that perhaps the most mighty obstruction which has ever been on the Earth for a thousand years, to the spread of the Gospel -- will have been removed and the way will be prepared for the introduction of the long hoped-for ‘**Millennium**.’”

On Revelation chapter nineteen, Barnes comments quite emphatically: “**The religion of Christ would finally prevail...** All persecution and sorrow here, would be followed by joy and triumph.” Christ on His white horse “is here the symbol of the **final victory** that is to be obtained over the Beast and the False-Prophet...and of the final **triumph of the Church...**

“There can be no doubt that the Messiah is intended [by the Rider on the white horse here in Revelation 19 as earlier in Revelation 6], as He goes forth **to the subjugation of the World to Himself...** These hosts of the redeemed on white horses accompany Him to be witnesses of His victory, and **to participate** in the joy of **His triumph...**

“The **sword** seems to be an emblem of **His words** or **doctrines**, as penetrating the hearts of men.... It is the emblem of a work of destruction wrought on His foes.... ‘With it, He would smite the Nations’...that were opposed to Him; to wit, those especially who were represented by the Beast and the False-Prophet....

“The Kings [would still be] under the control of **the Beast and the False-Prophet**, chapter 16:14f & 17:12-14.... There is allusion here to the same assembling of hostile forces which is described in chapter 16:13f....

“The writer in these passages designed to refer to the same events -- the **still-future** scenes that are to occur when **the Roman, the Pagan and the Mahometan powers** shall be aroused to make common cause against the True Religion....

“The ‘Beast’ here, as all along, refers to the **Papal** power.... The **False-Prophet** had been united with the Beast -- in deceiving the Nations.... The whole representation is that of an **alliance** to prevent the spread of the True Religion [of Protestant Christianity] -- **as if the Papacy and Mahometanism were combined.**”

However, “**the Beast and the False-Prophet**” alias “**the Papacy and Mahometanism...will be subdued by the Word** of the Son of God.... These great Anti-Christian powers which had so long resisted the Gospel and prevented it being spread over the Earth, which shed so much blood in persecution and had so long corrupted and deceived mankind, would be subdued.

“**The True Religion [namely Biblical Christianity] would be as triumphant** as if the Son of God should go forth as a warrior in His own right and secure their [Romish and/or Islamic] **Leaders** for punishment.... This destruction of these great enemies -- which the whole course of the interpretation leads us to suppose is still future -- prepares the way for the **[post]millennial reign** of the Son of God.”

In his *Analysis* of Revelation chapter twenty, Barnes states: “This chapter...pertains to the **future**, and discloses things which are **yet to occur**.... Satan is to be arrested and bound for a thousand years.... This is properly the ‘**Millennium**’ -- the **long** period when the principles of **True Religion** will have the **ascendency** on the **Earth**....

“There may be long intervening periods between the events thus thrown together into the final grouping. We are not to suppose necessarily that these events will succeed each other

immediately, or that they will be of short duration. Between these events thus hastily sketched, there may be long intervals that are not described....

“Hills in the distant view, may seem to lie near each other. One may seem to rise just back of another, and to the eye they may seem to constitute parts of the same mountain. And yet, **between** them there may be deep and fertile vales.... So it is in the prophecies....

“Time is marked in the prophetic description, until the fall of [Romanism as] the great enemy of the Church. Beyond that, it does not seem to have been regarded as necessary to determine the actual duration of the events referred to....

“The grand purpose was to show **that Christianity would finally triumph....** The **end** is triumphant and glorious. We are assured that every enemy of the Church will be slain, and that there will be a long period of happiness, prosperity, and peace....

“The number of the redeemed will be augmented beyond all computation; and the promise made from the beginning -- that ‘the seed of the woman should bruise the serpent’s head’ [Genesis 3:15] -- will be fulfilled in all its extent, and with a divine plenitude of meaning.”

In his *Commentary* itself, Dr. Barnes insists: “The scene that is recorded here [in Revelation 20:1f], occurs **after** the destruction of the Beast and the False-Prophet (chapter 19:18-21), and...**after** the final destruction of the Papal and Mahometan powers.... There are elsewhere in the Scriptures abundant promises that the Gospel will ultimately spread over the World.... The World shall enjoy a reign of peace and righteousness during the long period....

“**The Earth** would continue under a reign of righteousness, **through a vastly long period in the future....** During that period, there will be a state of things upon the Earth **as if** Satan should be withdrawn from the World.

As to the “**condition** of the World in the period referred to,” Dr. Barnes suggests the following. “(1) This will be **subsequent** to the downfall of the Papacy, and the termination of the Mahometan power in the World.... (2) It will be a condition of the World **as if** Satan were bound.... All that occurs [today] under the direct influence of Satan in causing or perpetuating...war, intemperance, lust, avarice, disorder, scepticism, atheism -- will be checked and stayed.... This passage does **not** require us to suppose that there will be a **total cessation** of Satanic influence in the Earth during that period...though there will be a general prevalence of righteousness.... (3) It will be a period of long duration....

“(4) What...will be the state of things during that...thousand years? (a) There will be a great increase in population.... (b) There will be a general diffusion of intelligence upon the Earth.... (c) There will be great progress in all that tends to promote the welfare of man.... (d) It will be marked by unlimited subjection to the scepter of Christ.... (e) It will be a period of the universal reign of peace.... (f) There will be a **general** prevalence of evangelical religion.... (g) it will be a time when the Hebrew people -- the Jews -- will be brought to the knowledge of the truth, and will embrace the Messiah whom their fathers crucified....

“The doctrine which has been held, and is held, by those [viz. the Premillennialists] who maintain

that there will be a **literal resurrection** of the saints to reign **with Christ** [and indeed] **during** a thousand years, can receive no support from this passage.... It may [instead very probably, on the other hand,] signify...the raising up of an increased Christian zeal and holiness; the revival of the Christian Church.... Christian principles shall be displayed in action throughout the World in an infinitely greater degree than ever before....

“Satan will be bound.... The True Religion will have the ascendancy in the Earth.... Holy principles will then reign.... Religion will no longer be trampled underfoot, but will triumph. In all parts of the Earth, it will have the ascendancy.... The ruling influence in the World will be the Religion of the Son of God.”

Barnes comments at Revelation 20:9f: “The great glory of the World will be the millennial period; when religion shall have the ascendancy and the [human] race shall have reached its highest point of progress on Earth -- and the blessings of liberty, intelligence, peace and piety shall have during that period been spread over the globe. In that long duration, who can estimate the numbers that shall be redeemed and saved? That period [once having] passed -- the great purpose contemplated by the creation of the Earth, the glory of God in the redemption of a fallen race and in setting up a Kingdom of righteousness in a World of apostasy, will have been accomplished.... There will be no reason why the Final Judgment should not then occur.”

At the same place, Barnes comments also on the way in which the ‘Millennium’ will **end**. Referring to Revelation 20:7f, he explains: “**This** overthrow of the enemies of God and of the Church, will be **final**. Satan will be ‘cast into the Lake of Fire and Brimstone, to be tormented day and night for ever.’

“The Beast and the False-Prophet are already there (chapter 19:20). That is, they will have ceased long since, even **before** the beginning of the millennial period.... Satan now, the last enemy, will be doomed to the same hopeless woe....

“**All** the enemies that have ever opposed the Church -- in all forms of Paganism, Mahometanism, Popery, and delusion -- will be destroyed for ever. The World then will have peace; the Church will have rest; the great triumph will have been achieved.”

On Revelation 21:24-26. Barnes comments: “All the saved [are] considered **as Nations**.... All that they consider as constituting their glory -- treasures, crowns, sceptres, robes...will be devoted to God in the future days of the Church in its glory.... **That** blessed World shall be made up of all that was truly valuable and pure on the [**present**] Earth.”⁷⁴⁸

– **ALBERT BARNES**, American Minister and Bible Commentator (A.D. 1860)

354) “The Kingdom of God, which has its commencement and completion in Jesus Christ the only-begotten Son of God, is ever approaching.... The idea of a glorified union of the human with the divine, by means of a living faith in Christ, in relation to the whole as well as to

individuals, will be **more** and more **realized** in the **fullness** of time....

“The spirit of Christianity will always be the incorruptible **inheritance** of **humanity**. These are **hopes** reaching far **beyond** a sensuous [pre]millenarianism and which we are **justified in cherishing** by the consideration of the course which, amidst numerous conflicts and errors, the development of Christian theology has taken to the present hour.”⁷⁴⁹

-- **KARL HAGENBACH**, German-Swiss Professor in Basel (A.D. 1860)

355) ”Christian education, more than anything else, has prepared a large body of the people for a wide rejection of Hinduism and for a reception of Christ as the Saviour, should it please God.... All history proclaims that this is the way in which God generally works. There are long seasons of preparation; **the truth is spread**; obstacles are removed out of the way, and **then God comes in His power and turns the people to Himself. A [Christian] nation is then born in a day; a little one becomes a **thousand**; and a small one a **strong nation**.**”⁷⁵⁰

– **ALEXANDER B. CAMPBELL**, Scottish Minister in India’s Madras (A.D. 1861)

356) “The ends which we propose to accomplish as a Church, are the same as those which are proposed by every other Church. **To proclaim God’s truth as a witness to the nations; to gather His elect from the four corners of the Earth; and...to train them for eternal life....**

“We are not ashamed to confess that we are intensely Presbyterian.... Our own scheme of government we humbly believe to be according to the pattern shown in the Mount [Exodus 19:7f & 20:20:1-18 & 25:40 cf. Hebrews 7:5], and by God’s grace, we propose to put its efficiency to the test....

“Finally, the General Assembly desires distinctly and deliberately to inscribe on our Church’s banner, as she now unfurls it to the World, in immediate connection with the Headship of Our Lord, His last command: ‘**Go ye into the World and preach the Gospel to every creature!**’ – regarding this as the great end of her organization, and obedience to it as the indispensable condition of her Lord’s promised presence, **and as one great comprehensive object a proper conception of whose vast magnitude and grandeur is the only thing which in connection with the love of Christ can ever sufficiently arouse her energies and develop her resources, so as to carry on with vigor and efficiency which true fealty to her Lord demands, those other agencies necessary to her internal growth and home prosperity.**”⁷⁵¹

– **PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN THE CSA**, Address First General Assembly (1861)

357) “All just government is the ordinance of God.... Magistrates are His Ministers, who must answer to Him for the execution of their trust.... The worst of all possible forms of government [is] a democratic absolutism.... We must contemplate people and rulers as alike subject to the authority of God. His will is the true supreme....

“The State...must needs be under moral obligation, and moral obligation without reference to a **Superior Will** is a flat contradiction in terms. If, then, the State is an ordinance of God -- it should acknowledge the fact. If it exists under the conditions of a [Moral] Law superior to all human decrees and to which all human decrees behove to be confirmed, that [Moral] Law should be distinctly recognized....

“It is not enough for a State which enjoys the light of divine revelation to acknowledge in general terms the supremacy of God. It must also acknowledge the supremacy of His Son, Whom He hath appointed heir of all things; by Whom also He made the Worlds. To Jesus Christ, all power in Heaven and Earth is committed. To Him, ever knee shall bow and every tongue confess. **He is the Ruler of the nations**, the King of kings, and Lord of lords....

“There are those who are opposed to the rights of property and the institution of marriage, yet the public conscience sanctions and protects them both. What, then, is this public conscience? It is clearly the sum of those convictions of right...which legislators feel themselves bound to obey in the structure of governments and the enactment of laws. It is a reflection of the Law of God.... When that Law is enunciated with authoritative clearness, as it is in the Scriptures -- it becomes only the more solemnly imperative....

“The overwhelming majority of the Christian people of these Confederate States...crave that a country which they love should be made yet dearer to them, and that the Government which they have helped to frame, they may confidently commend to their Saviour and their God under the cheering promise that those who honour Him, He will honour.... God is the ruler among the nations; and the people who refuse Him their allegiance shall be broken with a rod of iron or dashed in[to] pieces like a potter’s vessel....

“Our [Confederate] Republic will perish like the pagan republics of Greece and Rome, unless we baptize it into the Name of Christ. ‘Be wise now, therefore, O ye kings; be instructed, ye judges of the Earth! Kiss the Son, lest He be angry!’ [Psalm 2].... We, the people of these Confederate States, distinctly acknowledge our responsibility to God and the supremacy of His Son Jesus Christ as King of kings and Lord of lords; and hereby ordain that no law shall be passed by the Congress of these Confederate States inconsistent with the will of God as revealed in the Holy Scriptures.”⁷⁵²

“If the Church could be aroused to a deeper sense of the glory that awaits her, she would enter with a warmer spirit into the struggles that are before her. **Hope would inspire ardor.** She would even now rise from the dust and, like the eagle, plume her pinions for loftier flights than she has yet taken... Let the Church be in earnest after greater holiness in her own Members,

and in faith and love undertake the conquest of the World – and she will soon settle the question [as to] whether her resources are competent to change the face of the Earth!”⁷⁵³

– JAMES HENLEY THORNWELL, Professor at Columbia Seminary (A.D. 1862)

358) “In regard to what still remains to be accomplished...we cannot but see in the present state of the World and even of the professing Church – many great and discouraging obstacles in the way of success. Yet when viewed in the light of what has already been achieved, they cannot with certainty be pronounced insurmountable to Christian effort and resources.

“The small mustard seed has sprung up into a lofty tree. And whatever hindrances there may be tending to impede further progress and prevent ultimate success, they are of the same kind with those over which the truth has in a considerable degree prevailed and which no one has a right to say it cannot wholly overcome....

“Christ shall reign, till His enemies have become His footstool. And [He] shall cause the knowledge of the Lord to cover the Earth as the waters cover the sea. The word of prophecy can never reach its full accomplishment, till this result is attained.”⁷⁵⁴

One day, Christians will have “grown so many in number and so powerful in influence, that every sphere of life shall be penetrated by their agency, and every region of the Earth be willingly obedient to their sway.... What a remodelling shall it not need, to bring along with it of the political and social fabric!”⁷⁵⁵

– PATRICK FAIRBAIRN, Scottish Principal of Glasgow College (A.D. 1865)

359) “The work of the National Reform Association is based on these fundamental principles.... Almighty God is the Source of all power and authority in civil government; the Lord Jesus Christ is the divinely appointed Ruler of Nations; and His will, revealed in the Holy Scriptures, is of supreme authority in civil affairs.... Perceiving the subtle and persevering attempts which are made to prohibit the reading of the Bible in our Public Schools, to overthrow our Sabbath Laws, to abolish the Oath [and] Prayer in our National and State Legislatures...and other Christian features of our institutions and so to divorce the American Government from all connection with the Christian Religion..., this Association seeks such an amendment to the Constitution of the United States as will indicate that this is a Christian Nation – and place all the Christian laws, institutions and usages of our government on an undeniable legal basis in the fundamental Law of the land.”⁷⁵⁶

– NATIONAL REFORM ASSOCIATION OF AMERICA, Philadelphia (A.D. 1867)

360) “We don’t yet say – and it is the Church’s fault, in a great measure – that this command [in Matthew 28:19] in its full extent has been obeyed.... How many yet sit in darkness and in the shadow of death, externally! But there is a **universality of extent** in the command: ‘Go and preach the Gospel to **every** creature!’”⁷⁵⁷

– **RABBI JOHN DUNCAN**, Scottish Professor in Edinburgh (A.D. 1868)

361) “There will be a **vast preponderance of good over evil** as the fruit of redemption, [so] that not only will order be restored **throughout** the Universe, but the good will **far outnumber** the bad. The **saved** will be **many times more** than the **lost**.”⁷⁵⁸

– **ALVAH HOVEY**, American President of Newton Theological Seminary (A.D. 1870)

362) “We cannot despair of success.... When the morning dawns and struggles with the gloom of night – how doubtful, how gradual, is the progress of the conflict!... Yes, Christ is a Light to [en]lighten the **Gentiles**. And the glory of the Upper Heavens shall **yet** scatter and chase away the darkness which still broods sullenly over the **Earth**.”⁷⁵⁹

– **ROBERT W. DALE**, English Congregationalist Minister in Birmingham (1870)

363) “[Romans chapter 11] verses 12-15 clearly assert, as nearly all admit, that the **conversion of the Israelites** is the **precursor** of the **conversion of all nations**. So that the **Gentiles** brought into Christ’s Kingdom after the Jews: shall generally turn to God; **will be far more numerous than before**; and the great change in Israelites will be **life** from the dead **to** other nations.”⁷⁶⁰

“Though Christianity has not yet gained sufficient influence to expel national contests from among men, yet **finally it shall** cause men to **‘learn war no more’**.... There is hope for the Heathen in the promises and prophecies of God’s Word, [Psalm 72] verses 8-11. Tholuck: ‘the most **uncivilized**, the most **distant**, and most **opulent nations** shall pay their homage to Him.’”⁷⁶¹

– **WILLIAM SWAIN PLUMER**, American Professor at Columbia Seminary (1870)

364) “[**The Jews**] have been kept intact among all the changes, as if reserved for some great destiny in the future when they shall be brought in with the **fullness of the Gentiles** [Romans 11:25f].... Thus far, the prophecy [in Zechariah 8:23] has been amply fulfilled.

“But its **grandest** fulfilment is **yet to come**, when Jerusalem shall arise from the dust of her degradation and Moriah be crowned with the symbols of a pure worship and Olivet echo to the songs of the ransomed of Zion who shall return with joy and everlasting gladness. Then, and not until then, shall this prophecy have its grandest and fullest fulfilment in the glory of the latter-day restoration of Israel.

“And it is beautiful to remark [on] the **diffusive missionary spirit** that must accompany this great enlargement to Israel – showing as it does the identity of all true religion. The inhabitants of one city shall not be content with idly waiting until another city shall hear of these glad tidings, nor shall they merely send by another. But they shall go and themselves urge this great duty of seeking the Lord, and urge by the powerful suasion of example....

”That the tendencies of Christ’s Kingdom are to universal peace and universal piety [*cf.* in Zechariah 9:9f], we need not pause to argue. And that these tendencies shall yet be fully embodied, we believe as well from the voice of history as from the voice of prophecy. We have only to patiently labor, and patiently wait – and the white banner of the lowly King shall in due time be unfurled from every mountain-top and over every valley, and men be brother-murderers and brother-haters no more....

“When [in Zechariah 14:7f] the gloom that has thickened through the waning noon seems to be deepening into the blackness of night – then is the sudden sunburst of a bright revealing of the face of God, so that in the evening time there is light.... Verse 8 predicts the coming of blessings on the Earth, by means of the Church.... These very blessings...are yet in store for the Church. See Isaiah 44:3 *etc.*; Ezekiel’s vision of the river flowing forth..., chapter 47; Joel 3:18; and Revelation 22:1....

“[Zechariah 14] verse 16[f] turns to the Church and asserts her supremacy over **all** her enemies, and her extension over all the Earth.... The nations of the Earth shall come up to the observance.... All shall be happy, because all shall be holy.”⁷⁶²

– **THOMAS V. MOORE**, Presbyterian Preacher of Nashville (A.D. 1870)

365) “Jesus...here [in Psalm 2]...declares that His very enemies are His inheritance.... He declares this decree..., ‘He [the Father] hath given Me this – not only the right to be a king, but the power to conquer’.... Jehovah hath given to His Anointed a rod of iron with which He shall break rebellious **nations** in[to] pieces....

“‘All the ends of the World shall remember and turn unto the Lord; and all the kindreds of the nations shall worship before Him’ [Psalm 22:27].... Conversion work has hitherto been

circumscribed within certain parts of the World. But the time will come when ‘ all the kindreds of the Earth’ shall worship. These hopes are not the flight of an ardent imagination. They are founded on the true sayings of God.... The universal triumph of Christianity [is] certain....

“Where Jesus reigns in power, men must rend obeisance [Psalm 72:5f].... His Kingdom...is as lasting as the lights of heaven. Days and nights will cease, before He abdicates His throne.... The Kingdom of Jesus...is but in its youth, and is evidently the coming power, the rising sun. Would to God that fresh vigour were imparted to all its citizens to push at once the conquests of Immanuel to the uttermost ends of the Earth!...

“Even at this hour, we have before us the tokens of His eternal power. Since He ascended to His throne eighteen hundred years ago, His dominion has not been overturned – though the mightiest of empires have gone like visions of the night....

“Widespread shall be the rule of Messiah. Only the Land’s End -- shall end His territory. To the *Ultima Thule*, shall His sceptre be extended. From Pacific to Atlantic, and from Atlantic to Pacific, He shall be Lord – and the Oceans which surround each Pole, shall be beneath His sway. All other power shall be subordinate to His. No rival nor antagonist shall He know....

“Messiah’s Kingdom shall reach on to the utmost bounds of the round World.... So shall the Son of David rule all lands given Him...and leave no nation to pine beneath the tyranny of the [devilish] prince.....

“The white cliffs of Britain already own [or acknowledge] Him. The gems of the Southern Sea glitter for Him. Even Iceland’s heart is warm with His love. Madagascar leaps to receive Him.... Foreign princes from inland regions as yet unexplored, shall own the all-embracing monarchy of the King of kings....

“The extent of the mediatorial rule, is set forth by the two far-reaching **alls** – all kings, and all nations. We see not as yet all things put under Him. But since we see Jesus crowned with glory and honour in Heaven – we are altogether without doubt as to His universal monarchy on Earth. ‘Every knee shall bow to Him, and every tongue shall confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.’ Hasten it, O Lord, in Thine Own time!....

“‘All nations whom Thou has made shall come and worship before Thee, O Lord; and shall glorify Thy Name’ [Psalm 86:9].... The people who have been so long deceived, shall at last discover Thy greatness, and shall render Thee the worship which is Thy due. Thou has created them all, and unto Thee shall they all yield homage.... One day, all men would acknowledge the Lord to be the only God.... We are sure the majority will be with us tomorrow....

“David was not a believer in the theory that the World will grow worse and worse, and that the dispensation will wind up with general darkness and idolatry. [Yet] Earth’s sun is to go down amid tenfold night – if some of our ‘prophetic brethren’ are to be believed!

“Not so do we expect! But we look for a day when the dwellers in all lands shall learn righteousness; shall trust in the Saviour; shall worship thee alone, O God, ‘and shall glorify

Thy Name!’ The modern notion has greatly damped the seal of the Church for missions; and the sooner it is shown to be unscriptural, the better for the cause of God. It neither consorts with prophecy, honours God, nor inspires the Church with ardour. Far hence be it driven!”

In Psalm 110, “Jesus is placed in the seat of power, dominion and dignity – and is to sit there by divine appointment, while Jehovah fights for Him and lays every rebel beneath His feet. He sits there by the Father’s ordinance and call, and will sit there despite all the raging of His adversaries till they are all brought to utter shame by His putting His foot upon their necks.... The work of subduing the nations is now in the hand of the great God Who by His Providence will accomplish it to the glory of His Son....

“Let us never fear as to the future! While we see our Lord and Representative sitting in quiet expectancy – we too may sit in the attitude of peaceful assurance and with confidence await the grand outcome of all events. As surely as Jehovah liveth – Jesus must reign! Yea, even now He is reigning -- though all His enemies are not yet subdued.... Those rebels who now stand high in power, shall soon be in the place of contempt. They shall be His footstool. He shall with ease rule them. He shall sit and put His foot on them....

“It is in and through the Church that, for the present, the power of the Messiah is known. Jehovah has given to Jesus all authority in the midst of His people whom He rules with His royal sceptre. And this power goes forth with divine energy from the Church for the ingathering of the elect and the subduing of all evil.... In consequence of the sending forth of the rod of Strength – namely, the power of the Gospel, out of Zion [alias the Christian Church] – converts will come forward in great numbers to enlist under the banner of the Priest-King....

“‘He shall judge among the Heathen’ – or, among the nations. All nations shall feel His power – and either yield to it joyfully, or be crushed before it.... Pope and priest must fall – with Mahomet and other deceivers who are now heads of the people. Jesus must reign – and they must perish!”⁷⁶³

“Spirit of God, bring back Thy Church to a belief in the Gospel! Bring back her Ministers to preach it once again with the Holy Ghost – and not striving after wit and learning! Then shall we see Thine arm made bare, O God, in the eyes of all the people. And the myriads shall be brought to rally round the throne of God and the Lamb. The Gospel must succeed. It shall succeed. It cannot be prevented from succeeding. A multitude that no man can number, must be saved....

“The light of the doctrines of grace shall yet again shine forth as the sun. Elijah was wont to say: ‘As the Lord liveth, before Whom I stand.’ And this also is my confidence. Truth lives, because God lives. Though truth were dead and buried, it would rise again. The day is not far distant when the old, old Gospel shall again command the scholarship of the age – and shall direct the thoughts of men.”⁷⁶⁴

“I myself believe that King Jesus will reign, and the idols be utterly abolished.... I expect the same power which turned the World upside down once, will still continue to do it. The Holy

Ghost would never suffer the imputation to rest upon His Holy Name that He was not able to **convert the World.**⁷⁶⁵

“**Christ will have the whole Earth....** God will not be disappointed of His purpose. **This ruined World shall yet sing His praises....** **The whole** of His creatures shall magnify His Holy Name....

“Satan...seems to say today: ‘Thou King of kings! Take England for Thyself; and America be Thine! Here and there, Thou shalt take an island or a city – but let me have the masses of mankind! I will be lord of China’s teeming multitudes; and India shall lie within my coils.’

“Brethren, shall it be so? Shall it be so? Are you content in your Master’s Name to resign those mighty empires to the prince of darkness? Unanimous your hearts speak out your Master’s language – it must not, and it shall **not** be!

“The tramp of Christian heroes shall yet shake **those nations.** And the trumpet of Jubilee shall proclaim liberty to the bonded sons of Adam that are weeping there. They must – they **shall** belong to Christ!....

“Soldiers of Christ – to the battle, to the battle! All the line, **all the rampart must be stormed. Not a single castle must be left in the possession of the enemy.** We must dash him down from his hills, and rend him up from his valleys. He must not have a single spot whereon to place his foot....

“I see the Icelanders bowing before Christ, and the vilest and most depraved of men submitting to Jehovah’s sway. But Satan has one dark-souled being – the last man that is left unconverted. Ring your sabbath bells, my brethren! Go up to your house of prayer! Be happy!.... ‘Not a **hoof** shall be left behind!’.... Christ has conquered, and has taken back **all** His possessions. ‘Not a **hoof** shall be left behind!’⁷⁶⁶

“Let the whole militant Church of Christ be blessed; put power into all faithful ministries; convert this country; save it from abounding sin; let all the Nations of the Earth know the Lord.... Bring the Church to break down all bonds of nationality, all limits of sects, and may we feel the blessed unity which is the very glory of the Church of Christ! Yea, let the **whole Earth be filled with His glory!** Our prayer can never cease until we reach this point: ‘Thy Kingdom **come**; Thy will be done, on Earth as it is in Heaven!’ **Nothing less than this** can we ask for.⁷⁶⁷

– **CHARLES HADDON SPURGEON,** Greatest 19th-century Preacher (A.D. 1874)

366) “The Scriptural doctrine, therefore, is consistent with the admitted fact that separate nations, and the human race as a whole, have made **great advances** in all branches of knowledge and in all the arts of life. Nor is it inconsistent with the belief that the World under the influence of Christianity is **constantly improving,** and will ultimately attain, under the reign of Christ,

millennial perfection and glory....

“Having been committed to Him for a special purpose, this **universal dominion** as Mediator will be...accomplished. He will reign until all His enemies are put under His feet. And when the last enemy is subdued, He will deliver up this Kingdom unto the Father, and reign forever over the redeemed.”⁷⁶⁸

“There is to be a second personal visible and glorious Advent of the Son of God.... The events which are to precede that Advent, are: 1) The universal diffusion of the Gospel.... 2. The **conversion of the Jews**, which is to be national. As their casting away was national, although a remnant was saved; so their conversion may be national....

“In the Old Testament, the Messianic period is described as a whole. The fact that the Messiah was to come and establish an everlasting Kingdom which was to triumph over all opposition and experience a glorious consummation, is clearly foretold....

“In Matthew 24:24...there is...high authority for making *hō genea hautō*...refer to Israel as a people or race.... The Jews would not cease to be a distinct people until His predictions were fulfilled.... The prophecy of Christ extends to events in the distant future.... The destruction of Jerusalem was the **commencement** of that work of judgment which Christ foretold....

“The first great event which is to precede the Second Coming of Christ, is the universal proclamation of the Gospel.... That the Gospel must be preached to all nations before the Second Advent, is founded on the predictions of the Old Testament.... The true religion shall prevail over the whole Earth. Jehovah[-Jesus] shall everywhere be recognized and worshipped as the only true God....

“Christ repeatedly taught that the Gospel was to be preached to all nations, **before** His Second Coming [Matthew 24:14 & Mark 13:10].... The promise of Christ to be with His Church as then commissioned, to the end of the World -- implies that its obligation to **teach the nations is to continue until the final consummation** [Matthew 28:19ff]....

“In Romans 11:25, Paul teaches that the national conversion of the Jews is not to take place ‘until the fullness of the Gentiles be come in.’ The *plērōma tōn ethnōn* is that which makes the number of the Gentiles full; the full complement which the Gentiles are to render to make the number of the elect complete. This ingathering of the Heathen is the special work of the Church. It is a missionary work....

“These two duties of propagating and of defending the truth, the Apostles devolved on their successors. During the apostolic age and for some time after it, the former had the ascendancy; to preach the Gospel to all Nations, to bring all men to the knowledge of the truth, was felt to be the special vocation of the Church.”⁷³⁷⁹

“It is to be hoped...the Spirit...may be granted to the Church, Whose **fruits shall as far exceed those of the first effusion** as the millions of Christians now alive exceed in numbers the one hundred and twenty souls then gathered in Jerusalem [on Pentecost Sunday at the beginning of

the Book of Acts].... The conversion of the Gentile World is the work assigned the Church under the present dispensation; and that it is not to fold its hands and await the Second Coming of Christ to accomplish that work for it, seems evident from what has already been said....

“There is no intimation in the New Testament that the work of converting the World is to be effected by any other means -- than those now in use.... It is to dishonour the Gospel and the power of the Holy Spirit, to suppose that they are inadequate to the accomplishment of this work.... The wonderful success of the work of missions in our day, goes to prove the fact contended for.... The foundations of ancient systems of idolatry have been undermined; nations lately heathen have become Christian, and are taking part in sending the Gospel to those still sitting in darkness.... Nothing seems wanting to secure the gathering of the Gentiles, but a revival of the missionary spirit of the apostolic age....

“The second great event...to precede the Second Advent of Christ, is the national conversion of the Jews.... The most decisive passage...bearing on this subject...is the eleventh chapter of...Romans.... It is, in view of the context, a promise of the restoration of the Jews as a Nation. There is therefore to be a national conversion of the Jews....

“This conversion is to take place **before** the Second Advent.... The rejection of the Jews was the occasion of the conversion of the Gentiles; and the conversion of the Gentiles is to be the occasion **of the restoration of the Jews**.... When Jesus comes...the Jews must have **been** converted and **have become a Christian Nation**....

“That **Antichrist** is to appear **before** the Second Coming of Christ, is expressly asserted by the Apostle in Second Thessalonians 2:1-3.... The common opinion...among Protestants is that the prophecies concerning Antichrist have special reference to the Papacy....

“The first question to be determined in the interpretation of this prophecy is whether **Antichrist** is a particular individual, or an **institution**.... It is generally understood of the **Roman** power.... The second question is whether the Antichrist here described is an **ecclesiastical or civil power**; whether it is to arise in the Church or in the World. The considerations...favour...the **former** of these assumptions....

“Antichrist according to the Apostle was to...‘exalt himself above all that...is worshiped; so that he...sitteth in the Temple of God, shewing himself that he is [a] god.’ This is true of no worldly power. It was not true of Antiochus Epiphanes.... It was **not** true of **any** of the Roman Emperors....

“No more conclusive argument to prove that the Papacy is Antichrist could be constructed, than that furnished by Dr. Newman -- himself a Romanist.... Another argument to prove that the Antichrist described by the Apostle is an ecclesiastical power, is that his appearance is the consequence of a great apostasy.... According to Paul’s account, Antichrist was to arise in the Church.... This portrait suits the Papacy so exactly, that Protestants...have rarely doubted that it is the Antichrist which the Apostle intended to describe....

“The Apocalypse seems to be a summing-up and expansion of all the eschatological prophecies

of the Old Testament; especially of those of Ezekiel, Zechariah and Daniel.... The most commonly accepted view of the general contents of the book [of Revelation] by those who adopt the chronological method, is that so clearly presented in the admirable little work of Dr. James M. Macdonald (now of Princeton)....

“The introduction is contained in chapters 1-3.... Part second relates the Jewish persecutions, and the destruction of that power.... Part third relates the Pagan persecutions, and the end of the Pagan persecution power.... Part fourth relates the **Papal** persecutions and errors and their end, in chapters 13:11 to 19. And part fifth relates the **latter-day glory**, the battle of Gog and Magog, the final judgment, and the heavenly state -- in chapters 20 to 22....

“The Roman Catholic Church is not only accidentally and *de facto*, but in virtue of its very principle -- a harlot. She has the lamentable distinction of being **the** harlot *kat' exochōn*, the metropolis of whoredom, the Mother of harlots (Revelation 17:5). It is she who more than others boasts of herself: ‘I sit as a queen and am not widow, and shall see no sorrow’ (18:7).... The evangelical Protestant Church is, according to her principle and fundamental creed, a chaste woman. The Reformation was a protest of the [chaste] Woman against the Harlot.”⁷⁸⁰

“The ancient prediction that Japhet should dwell in the tents of Shem, had its fulfilment every time the [Japhethitic] descendants of the former participated in the temporal or spiritual heritage of the children of the latter [in the tents of Shem]; and had its **final and great accomplishment in the sons of Japhet sharing the blessings of redemption which were [yet] to be realized in the line of Shem** [Genesis 9:27 *cf.* Romans 11:12-32]....

“As this Kingdom [of Christ] is thus manifold, so also it is, in some of its aspects, **progressive**. It is represented in Scripture as passing through different stages.

“In prophecy [Daniel 2], it is spoken of as a stone cut out without hands which became a great mountain and filled the **whole Earth**. In Daniel 7:14, it is said of the Messiah that to Him ‘there was given dominion and glory and a Kingdom [so] that all people [and] nations and languages should serve Him.’ So too in Psalm 2:8, it is written of Him: ‘Ask of Me, and **I shall give Thee the Heathen** for Thine inheritance, and the **uttermost parts of the Earth** for Thy possession!’ In Psalm 72:11, ‘**All nations** whom Thou has made, shall come and **worship before Thee**, O Lord; and shall glorify Thy Name.’ In Isaiah 49:6: ‘**I will also give Thee for a Light to the Gentiles**, [so] that Thou mayest be My salvation **unto the end of the Earth.**’ In Habakkuk 2:14: ‘**The Earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the glory of the Lord as the waters cover the sea.**’ And in Malachi 1:11: ‘From the rising of the sun even unto the going down of the same, **My Name shall be great among the Gentiles.**’

“The Scriptures abound with passages of similar import, It is not only asserted that the Kingdom of Christ is to attain this **universal extension by slow degrees**, but its gradual progress is illustrated in various ways. Our Lord compares His Kingdom to a grain of mustard-seed (which is indeed the least of all seeds, but when it is grown it is the **greatest** among herbs); and to leaven (which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal till the **whole** was leavened).”⁷⁸¹

“Nothing therefore can be more opposed to the plain teaching of the New Testament, than that the Kingdom of Christ is yet future and is not to be inaugurated until His second coming. This is to

confound its consummation with its commencement.”⁷⁸²

“Experience concurs with Scripture in teaching: that the Kingdom of Christ passes through many vicissitudes.... It has its times of depression and its seasons of exaltation and prosperity.... Before the second coming of Christ, there is to be a time of great and long-continued prosperity.... All nations are to be converted.... The Jews are to be brought in and reingrafted into their own olive-tree.... Their restoration is to be the occasion and the cause of a change from death unto life. That is, analogous to the change of a body mouldering in the grave to one instinct with joyous activity and power.”⁷⁸³

“During this period [of a subsequent and yet-future Millennium], be it longer or shorter, the Church is to enjoy a season of peace, purity, and blessedness such as it has never yet experienced. The principal reason for assuming that the Prophets predict a glorious state of the Church prior to the second advent, is that they represent the Church as being thus prosperous and glorious on Earth....

“As therefore the Scriptures teach that the Kingdom of Christ is to extend over all the Earth; that all nations are to serve Him; and that all people shall call Him blessed – it is to be inferred that these predictions refer to a state of things which is to exist before the second coming of Christ. This state is described as one of spiritual prosperity....

“Knowledge shall everywhere abound. Wars shall cease to the ends of the Earth, and there shall be nothing to hurt or destroy.... This does not imply that there is to be neither sin nor sorrow in the World during this long period, or that all men are to be true Christians.... It is only a higher measure of the good which the Church of the Lord has experienced in the past, that we are taught to anticipate in the future....

“The common doctrine of the Church...is that the conversion of the World, the restoration of Jews, and the destruction of the Antichrist are to precede the second coming of Christ – which [latter] event will be attended by the general resurrection of the dead, the final judgment, the end of the World, and the consummation of the Church....

“We have reason to believe, as urged in the first volume of this work, and as often urged elsewhere, that the number of the finally lost in comparison with the whole number of the saved will be very inconsiderable.”⁷⁸⁴

– **CHARLES HODGE**, American Professor at Princeton (A.D. 1874)

367) “The Lutheran Church was right in her rejection of Chiliasm, when it was urged upon her in a carnal and fanatical manner by the Anabaptists who dreamed of a literal presence of Christ in a sensible [or tactile] reign upon Earth.... [Yet] **history** must at some time read its *akm* -- its **culminating point.**

“There must be some climax which the human race and the Church may attain to, even within

this present state and these **earthly** conditions – a period which shall present the highest **blossoming** and flowering of history. Christianity must necessarily and essentially be not only a suffering and struggling power in the World, but a **World-conquering, a World-ruling** power likewise.

“After great struggles, after times of terrible confusion in which evil has revealed a terrible might – **we look forward** to a period when the loftiest idea of Christianity shall be **attained**; a period which shall realize the truth hidden in the Ancient Jewish [or rather Hebrew] notion of an **earthly Messianic reign...**; a time in which the Church shall celebrate her ‘Sabbath Eve,’ the eve before the ‘[World] Sabbath.’ Because the teleology of this World shall now have reached its goal....

“There will [then] be no worldly power in hostility confronting Christianity. For the ideal of Christianity shall rule the actual. The **states and institutions of municipal life** shall then be governed by Christian principle. The ideals of **Christian art and science** will then display their **highest perfection**. And the idea of humanity will be illustrated and glorified in Christianity....

“The **Church** will display a **universal activity, a universal development of her various gifts....** The principle of individualism shall be harmonized with that of universality. In this period also, we place the **engrafting** of Israel and the bringing in of the **fullness of the Gentiles**.”⁷⁸⁵

– **HANS MARTENSEN**, Lutheran Bishop of Seeland in Denmark (A.D. 1874)

368) “We, the colonists of New South Wales, 'bring out with us' (to adopt the words of *Blackstone*) this first great Common Law maxim distinctly handed down by *Coke* and *Blackstone* and every other English judge long before any of our colonies were in legal existence or even thought of, that '**Christianity is part and parcel of our general laws**'; and that all the revealed or divine law, so far as **enacted by the Holy Scriptures to be of universal obligation**, is part of our colonial law -- as clearly explained by *Blackstone*, Vol. I, pp. 42-3; and Vol. IV., pp. 43-60.”

Blackstone there stated *inter alia*: “The doctrines...we call the revealed or divine law...in the Holy Scriptures...are found upon comparison to be really a part of the original law of nature.... The moral precepts of this law are indeed of the same original with those of the law of nature....

“Upon these two foundations, the law of nature and the law of revelation, depend all human laws; that is to say, no human laws should be suffered to contradict these.... To instance in the case of murder..., if any human law should allow or injoin us to commit it -- we are bound to transgress that human law....

“The belief of a future state of **rewards** and punishments, the entertaining just ideas of the moral attributes of the Supreme Being, and a firm persuasion that He superintends and will finally compensate every action in human life -- all which are clearly revealed in the doctrines and **forcibly** inculcated by the precepts of **our Saviour Christ** -- these are the grand foundations of

all judicial oaths....

"Offences against the see of Rome are not heresy...[but it is] proper for the civil magistrate...to interpose with regard to one species of heresy very prevalent in modern times.... If any person educated in the Christian religion or professing the same shall by writing, printing, teaching or advised speaking **deny** any one of the Persons in the **Holy Trinity** to be God, or maintain that there are more Gods than one -- he shall undergo the same penalties and incapacities which were just now mentioned....

"As to *Papists*..., if once they could be brought to renounce the supremacy of the Pope -- they might quietly enjoy their seven sacraments, their purgatory, and auricular confession; their worship of reliques and images; nay even their transubstantiation. But while they acknowledge a foreign power superior to the sovereignty of the kingdom -- they cannot complain if the laws of that kingdom will not treat them upon the footing of good subjects.

"*Blasphemy* against the Almighty by denying His being or providence; or by contumelious reproaches of our Saviour Christ...[and] all profane scoffing at the Holy Scripture or exposing it to contempt and ridicule...are offences punishable at Common Law by fine and imprisonment or other infamous corporal punishment. For Christianity is part of the law....

"If in any stage play, interlude or shew, the Name of the **Holy Trinity** or **any of the Persons therein** be jestingly or profanely used – the offender shall forfeit." TV stations, beware!

Thus the passages in Blackstone. They were approvingly referred to by Judge Hargrave in New South Wales.⁷⁸⁶

– **HIS HONOUR MR. JUSTICE HARGRAVE**, New South Wales Judge (A.D. 1874)

369)

"At the sign of triumph, Satan's host doth flee.
On then, Christian soldiers, on to victory!
Hell's foundations quiver at the shout of praise.
Brothers, lift your voices; loud your anthems raise!....
Gates of hell can never 'gainst that Church prevail –
We have Christ's Own promise, and that cannot fail!"

– **SABINE BARING-GOULD**, Famous Christian Hymnwriter (A.D. 1875)⁷⁸⁷

370) "Fortresses [are being] erected by Satanic art, to impede the progress of Christianity. All these must be captured and destroyed.... When all these...fortresses are overthrown and **China** becomes a subject kingdom under Messiah's peaceful reign, it will be the greatest triumph ever

achieved for Christianity since the time when the Roman religion and powers and the Greek philosophy were dragged down as captives behind the car of the victorious Redeemer.”⁷⁸⁸

– **DR. EDKINS**, Missionary Scientist in China’s Shanghai (A.D. 1877)

371) “**Before this second Advent**, the following events must have occurred. The development and secular **overthrow of Antichrist** (Second Thessalonians 2:3-9; Daniel 7:24-26; Revelation 17 & 18), **which is the Papacy**. The **proclamation of the Gospel to all nations** and the general **triumph of Christianity over all false religions in all nations** (Psalm 72:8-11; Isaiah 2:2-4; Daniel 2:44,45 & 7:14; Matthew 28:19-20; Romans 11:12,15,25; Mark 13:10; Matthew 24:14); [and] the **general and national return of the Jews [not necessarily to the Near East but certainly] to the Christian Church** (Romans 11:15-26).”⁷⁸⁹

“Let us not be cast down! We remember that so swiftly as the dark edge of night devours the surface of our World from sight – even so swiftly does the advancing flush of day revolve behind it, and reconquer it to light and joy. **Thus will the light of the Sun of Righteousness follow and outrun the shadows of death, until they darken the Earth no more....**

“**Only in the fourteenth century did the twilight begin slowly and dimly to emerge, which at length in the sixteenth broke into the new dayspring of the Reformation**. From that day to this, **there has been a steady progress** in the rearrangement of all the influences which can facilitate the World’s redemption. ‘And now, behold -- lift up your eyes and look [up]on the fields; for they are white again to harvest!’ **Never since the era when Christ sent forth Apostles and Evangelists into the whitened crop, has the World seen a second season so propitious as our age for the ingathering of the people to Him**.”⁷⁹⁰

– **ROBERT LEWIS DABNEY**, American Professor in Union Seminary (A.D. 1878)

372) “If you do not faithfully maintain the crown rights of Jesus the King of men..., religious liberty cannot be retained by men who in civil matters deny their allegiance to the King. In the Name of the adorable Victim of that bloody and agonizing sacrifice whence you draw all your hopes of salvation; by Gethsemane and Calvary, I charge you, citizens of the United States, afloat on your wide wild sea of politics – there is another King, one Jesus! The safety of the state can be secured only in the way of humble and whole-souled loyalty to His Person and of obedience to His Law.”⁷⁹¹

“If Adam had not apostatized, the entire course of human history would have been a normal development in fellowship with God. The central principle of loyalty to God have been preserved intact, the whole moral nature of man would have grown healthily, and all his faculties in all their exercises and all his relations with his fellows would have been correspondingly

normal.

“But since introduced rebellion against the supreme authority of God, the human character has been radically corrupted -- and human society disorganized.... In consequence of this state of facts, the God of Heaven has set up a Kingdom in antagonism to the kingdom of Satan and to all temporal kingdoms organized in Satan’s interest.

“This Kingdom shall never be destroyed – but, breaking in[to] pieces all its antagonists, shall stand for ever. This Kingdom of the God of Heaven was introduced immediately after the Fall....

“This Kingdom is to endure for ever – gradually to embrace all the inhabitants of the Earth, and finally the entire moral government of God in Heaven and on Earth. The little stone which breaks the image, will become a great mountain and fill the whole Earth. Daniel 2:35. This Gospel of the Kingdom is to be preached to all nations [Matthew 24:14 cf. 28:19]. Then all the kingdoms of this World shall become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ, and He shall reign for ever and ever [Revelation 11:15]....

“The process by which this Kingdom grows through its successive stages toward its ultimate completion, can of course be very inadequately understood by us. It implies the ceaseless operation of the mighty power of God working through all the forces and laws of nature, and culminating in the supernatural manifestations of grace.... This Kingdom from the beginning and in the whole circle of human history, has been always coming. Its coming has been marked by great epochs....

“The chiefest of these, have been the giving of the Law; the incarnation, crucifixion, resurrection, ascension and session of the King on the right hand of the Father; and the mission of the Holy Ghost.... The great end in which all the providential activities of God culminate in this World, is the establishment of a universal Kingdom of righteousness which is to embrace all men.... The Moral law still binds the unregenerate.... It should ever continue in this life to the regenerated and progressively sanctified Christian [as] the transcendent measure and test of right....

“The Kingdom of God on Earth is not confined to the mere ecclesiastical sphere, but aims at absolute **universality** and **extends** its supreme rule over **every** department of human life. It follows that **it is the duty of every loyal subject to endeavour to bring all human society, social and political as well as ecclesiastical, into obedience to its Law of righteousness.** It is our duty, as far as lies in our power, immediately to organize human society and all its institutions and organs upon a distinctively Christian basis. Indifference or impartiality here between the Law of the Kingdom and the law of the World or its prince the devil, is utter treason to the King of Righteousness.

“The Bible, the great statute-book of the Kingdom, explicitly lays down principles which when candidly applied, **will regulate the action of every human being in all relations.** There can be no compromise. The King said, with regard to all descriptions of moral agents in all spheres of activity, ‘he that is not with Me is against Me.’

“If the national life in general is organized upon Non-Christian principles, the churches which are embraced within the universal assimilating power of that nation will not long be able to preserve their integrity.... When human society was reconstructed after the destruction by the Flood, the laws of differentiation and dispersion prevailed for millenniums.... But when Christ assumed the reins of His Kingdom at the right hand of the Majesty on high, the tendency was instantly reversed.

“His commission was: ‘Go, disciple all nations, baptizing them; teaching them; and lo I am with you to the end of the ages!’ The banner of the Kingdom was set up in Jerusalem, and carried throughout the Roman Empire; then throughout Europe; thence throughout the World.”⁷⁹²

“The **multitude** of the redeemed will be **incomparably** greater than the number of the lost. My father [Rev. Professor Dr. Charles Hodge of Princeton], at the close of his long life spent in the defense of Calvinism, wrote...: ‘I am fully persuaded that the **vast majority** of the human race will share in the beatitudes and glories of our Lord’s redemption.’

“Remember that the **vast populations** of the **coming Millennium** are given to Christ! Then shall the promises of Christ to [Abraham] the great ‘father of the faithful’ be fulfilled to the letter: ‘Thy seed shall be like the **sands** of the **sea-shore**’ [and] ‘Thy seed shall be like the **stars of Heaven** for multitude.’ And recollect that when God made this promise, while Abraham saw only with the naked eye, God took in far more than even the telescopic Heavens in magnitude!”⁷⁹³

“In the development of the plan of redemption, the God-man as mediatorial King has [note here the **past** tense!] assumed the government of the universe. Matthew 28:18; Philippians 2:9-11; Ephesians 1:17-23.

“As the universe constitutes one physical and moral system, it was necessary that His Headship as Mediator should **extend** to the **whole** and to every department thereof – in order that **all** things should work together for **good** to **His people** and for His glory, [so] that **all His enemies** should be **subdued** and finally judged, and [so] that **all creatures** should **worship Him**, as His Father had determined. Romans 8:28; First Corinthians 15:25; Hebrews 10:13 & 1:6; Revelation 5:9-13. Hence the **present** providential Governor of the physical universe and ‘Ruler among the **nations**’ is Jesus of Nazareth, the **King** of the Jews, to Whose will **all laws** should be **conformed**, and Whom **all nations** and **all rulers** of men should acknowledge and serve.”⁷⁹⁴

“The Apostles...gradually were brought to the full knowledge of the truth.... They never taught that the second coming of their Lord was to occur in their lifetime, or at any fixed time whatever.... They learned, and explicitly taught, that the time of the second advent was not only uncertain but that many events [then] still future must previously occur – e.g., the Anti-Christian apostasy; the preaching of the Gospel of every nation; the fullness of the Gentiles; the conversion of the Jews; the Millennial prosperity of the Church.... Romans 11:15-32; Second Corinthians 3:15-16; Second Thessalonians 2:2. This is clear, because the coming of Christ is declared to be attended with the resurrection of the dead, the general judgment, the general conflagration, and the restitution of all things....

“The civil magistrate is to endeavour to **advance** the glory of God...though the **promotion** of the **good** of the community (Romans 13:4) in temporal concerns including education, morals, **physical prosperity**, the protection of life and property, and the preservation of order...by the **explicit recognition** of God and of Jesus Christ as ‘**Ruler among the nations**’; and by the **enactment and enforcement of all laws** conceived in the true Spirit of the Gospel touching **all** questions upon which the Scriptures indicate the will of God specifically or in general principle -- and especially as touching questions of the sabbath day, the oath, marriage and divorce, and capital punishments, *etc.*”⁷⁹⁵

“The Scriptures, both of the Old and New Testament, clearly reveal that **the Gospel is to exercise an influence over all branches of the human family, immeasurably more extensive and more thoroughly transforming than any it has ever realized in time past.** This end is to be gradually attained **through the spiritual presence of Christ in the ordinary dispensation of Providence and ministrations of His Church.** Matthew 13:31-32; 28:19-20; Psalm 2:7-8; 22:27-29; 82:8-11; Isaiah 2:2-3; 11:6-9; 60:12; 66:23; Daniel 2:35,44; Zechariah 9:10; 14:9; Revelation 11:15.”⁷⁹⁶

– **ARCHIBALD ALEXANDER HODGE**, American Professor at Princeton (A.D. 1879)

373) “It is in very deed God’s purpose that the fulfilment of His eternal purpose, and **the coming** of His Kingdom, should depend on those of His people who, abiding in Christ, are **ready to take up their position in Him their Head**, the great Priest-King, and in their prayers are bold enough to say what they will that their God should do. **As image-bearer and representative of God on Earth, redeemed man has by his prayers to determine the history of this Earth.** Man was created, and has now again been redeemed, to pray – **and by his prayer to have dominion.**”⁷⁹⁷

“Lord Jesus! It is in Thee [that] the Father hath **again** crowned **man** with glory and honour, and opened the way for us to be what he would have us. O Lord, have mercy on Thy people, and visit Thine heritage! **Work mightily in Thy Church, and teach Thy believing disciples to go forth** in their royal priesthood and in the power of prayer to which Thou hast given such wonderful promises -- to serve Thy Kingdom; **to have rule over the nations;** and [to] **make the Name of God glorious in the Earth!**”⁷⁹⁸

– **REV. DR. ANDREW MURRAY**, South Africa’s most beloved Preacher (A.D. 1880)

374) “‘Another parable spake He unto them: The Kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.’ This parable relates also to **the marvellous increase of the Kingdom of God.**

“But while the last [parable of the mustard seed] sets forth its outward visible manifestation, this [parable of the leaven] declares its hidden working, **its mysterious influence on the World which**

on **all** sides it touches. While the leavening of the mass has never ceased to go forward, yet the promise of the parable has hitherto been realized only in a very imperfect measure. Nor can we consider these words, 'till the whole is leavened,' as less than a **promise of the final complete triumph of the Gospel** – that it will diffuse itself through all life."⁷⁹⁹

– **RICHARD TRENCH**, Irish Episcopalian Archbishop of Dublin (A.D. 1880)

375) "Paul...seems to have expected a flowering-time of Christianity in the earthly World-period before the end of the World, in consequence of the Christianizing of all nations and also of the Jews.... A flowering-time of the Church **is** perhaps then to be **expected**, especially through the Christianizing of all nations (Matthew 24:14,24ff [and] Romans 11:15,25ff). Because **then** humanity has again become a unity, acknowledging one Shepherd; because then all charisms bestowed on every nation by nature, must tend to the advantage of the whole Church; finally, because even the love of old Christendom will be invigorated by the first love of the newly converted nations. This Scriptural doctrine [has been] held fast by the Christian hope of all ages."⁸⁰⁰

– **AUGUST DORNER**, German Professor of Theology in Berlin (A.D. 1880)

376) "'The Great River Euphrates' [in Revelation 16:12-13] is taken as a symbol of the barbarian peoples of Asia.... The sixth vial renders this spring of Turkish power dry -- so that **Mohammadanism** might **vanish** in Europe....

"The kings of the East,' abandoning Mohammedanism, will embrace Christianity – thus fulfilling the purpose of the pouring out of the sixth vial 'upon the Great River' called 'Euphrates.' Over the fertile valleys of Asia where in the past millions of people subsisted, God no longer permits the perpetuation and increase of peoples and races that blaspheme His great name. But by means of disease and scarcity of crops, He exterminates them as He prepares a New World and a new social order in the East to replace the old system now in the process of abolition....

"The Christian element, though still under Turkish [alias the Islamic] yoke, increases steadily. The cause of this phenomenon is the sixth vial -- the objective of which is to dry [up] the waters of Euphrates, [so] that the way of the kings of the East might be prepared'" whereby they shall come to Christ."⁸⁰¹

Following the pouring out of the seventh vial, "this war between the kings of Europe and the Lamb has not yet been waged. But it will come, following the dissolution of the [Islamic or] Turkish Empire." Yet this shall lead to the "foundation of the new Christian Kingdom. For the Kingdom of Christ will abolish Satan's war."⁸⁰²

“In Revelation 17:14, ‘these [kings] shall make war with the Lamb. But the Lamb shall overcome them. For He is Lord of lords and King of kings. And they that are with Him are called and chosen and faithful.’

“This war is naturally interpreted as the one in which the nations represent the entire World of Islam extending over Asia and Arabia and Africa. And the kings that rule through war or the right of succession, will unite against the new social order of Christ which is preached both in word and in deed by the Christian Church....

“This great and mighty voice [in Revelation 18:2f] proclaims the moral downfall of the Roman Catholic Church... Foul and hated vultures symbolize Teachers...of the popish doctrine, hierarchical organization, and spiritual government of the Roman Catholic Church.”

In Revelation 19:15f, “this ‘sharp sword’ is a symbol of the power of Christ’s Word.... Both of these, Mohammed and the Pope, the latter of whom aided and reinforced the kings of the Earth, are captured by the holy angels... The souls of Mohammed [the ‘false-prophet’] and of the chief heretic Pope [‘the beast’] and his successors are first seized and then cast alive with their bodies into the lake of fire burning with brimstone [Revelation 19:20].”⁸⁰³

– APOSTOLOS MAKRAKIS, Renowned Greek-Orthodox Theologian (A.D. 1881)

377) “The one pervading and impelling idea of the Old Testament, is the royal reign of God on Earth... Almost a thousand years before Christ rises, the longing cry after the future Kingdom of God – a Kingdom which is to conquer and win all nations and to plant in Israel righteousness, knowledge, peace and blessing – [is] that [of the] Kingdom of God in which God or His Vicegerent the Messiah is to be King over the whole Earth. And all generations are [then] to come up and worship the Lord of hosts.”⁸⁰⁴

“Christ ‘sat down [to reign] at the Right Hand of God.’ Henceforth, neither doubting, ashamed, nor yet afraid – they [His disciples] ‘were continually in the Temple, blessing God.’ ‘And they went forth and preached everywhere, the Lord working with them and confirming the Word by the signs that followed.’

“Amen! Amen! It is so! Ring out the bells of Heaven; sing forth the angelic welcome of worship; carry it to the utmost bounds of Earth! Shine forth from Bethany, Thou Son of Righteousness, and chase away Earth’s mist and darkness! For Heaven’s golden day has broken.”⁸⁰⁵

– ALFRED EDERSHEIM, Hebrew-Christian Professor at Oxford University (1883)

378) “Between these two events [viz. the A.D. 70 destruction of Jerusalem and the second coming of Jesus], the Messianic Aeon intervenes. Its beginning was like the little mustard seed; or like the stone cut out of the mountain, without hands. But it grows, and rolls on, and will increase – until it becomes a great mountain and fills all the Earth. Its history and triumphs are still mainly in the future. And centuries will probably elapse before it reaches fullness of development. When the Christ shall have put down all other enemies, He will finally [come again and] abolish death.”⁸⁰⁶

– MILTON S. TERRY, American Professor of Old Testament (A.D. 1883)

379) “‘The rebuke of His people, shall He take away from off all the Earth’... I cannot but think that there is a sense in which the Visible Church of Christ shall, on the Earth, enjoy the fulfilment of this promise. The time is coming when she shall possess in Christ’s Name, the whole Earth – the power of the Lord subduing all nations into ‘the obedience of the [Christian] Faith’ as He extends to them by means of a preached Gospel the rod of His strength from Zion (that is, the Christian Church)....

‘His Word promises what His grace will supply and His right hand accomplish. Do not shrink, then, believer, from expecting unspeakably great things from Him Who is ‘able to do exceeding abundantly above all that you can ask or think!’ Expect much, because of what the Lord hath spoken – for yourself, for the Church on Earth, and for all the ransomed of the Lord in Heaven for ever!”⁸⁰⁷

– JOHN KENNEDY, Famous Scottish Preacher of Dingwall (A.D. 1883)

380) In the 1884 New South Wales case of *Regina v. Darling & Others*, it was deemed “**an offence at Common Law**, punishable by fine or imprisonment or both, wilfully to disturb a congregation assembled for the purpose of religious worship. The defendants were convicted of wilfully and contemptuously disturbing a certain congregation of the Salvation Army there lawfully assembled for the purpose of public worship.

“The disturbance was created by the defendants assembled in the vicinity of the building where the Salvation Army was conducting a religious service. After being convicted by Windeyer J., the defendants had appealed.”

On appeal, Sir J. Martin C.J. stated: “An opinion has been expressed that the Christian religion in any of its forms is not recognized by the law of this country. **No greater mistake can be made.** It has been frequently and correctly stated both in England and here [in Australia] that **Christianity** is part of the **Common Law**, that our laws are based upon its principles, and that our Common Law can be traced back to those principles which run through the whole course of our statute law as well.... **Christianity is part of the Common Law of England, and part of**

the law of this Colony [of New South Wales]...

"People engaged in religious services are not to be disturbed by persons **irreverently** and **immodestly bearing themselves in or about a church**. It does not matter where such conduct takes place. If either inside or near to the place of worship, disturbance is created -- **it is an offence punishable at Common Law**."⁸⁰⁸

– SIR J. MARTIN, Lord Chief Justice of New South Wales in Australia (A.D. 1884)

381) "Jesus Christ is King of kings. Kings and **governments must submit to His authority**. His **Word must be recognized as paramount Law**. And all laws, institutions and usages of government must be conformed to it. To maintain all existing Christian features where they may be lacking, and to secure the whole by suitable provisions in the National Constitution, is the aim of the National Reform Association."⁸⁰⁹

– T.R. STEVENSON, American Editor of *The Christian Statesman* (A.D. 1884)

382) "The mediatorial dominion of Christ may be seen in the provision He has made for the **diffusion** and perpetuation of the Visible Church – its diffusion **over the habitable globe**, and its perpetuation to the end of time.... It is lamentable to think how small a portion of the Earth has **hitherto** been blessed with the ordinances of true religion....

"Taking a survey of the World, and bearing in mind such predictions...as those above cited [Daniel 2:25; Psalm 72:8,11,17,19; Isaiah 2:2;11:9] -- we cannot help feeling that 'there remaineth yet **very much land to be possessed**.' The field of Messiah's operations, is the **World**.

"Nor will He cease to put forth His power for the **extension** of His Church, till He has made the wilderness and the solitary place to be **glad**, and the desert to rejoice and blossom as the rose. The outward ordinances of visible Christianity shall be **universally** spread abroad.... Every obstruction to the **triumphant progress** of the chariot of **salvation** shall be effectually removed....

"The delusions of the **false prophet** [Muhammad] shall be **dissipated** by the drying up of the River Euphrates, [so] that a way may be prepared for the kings of the East [to come to Christ]. Jewish obstinacy and unbelief shall be broken, and the veil taken from the eyes of that interesting people in reading Moses and the Prophets.

"All the hideous forms of polytheistic **Paganism**, shall give way to the one religion of **Jesus**. That monstrous [Romish] corruption of Christianity, which has so long usurped the place and

claimed the honour of the True Faith, shall be cast into the lake of fire."⁸¹⁰

"The Anti-Christian leaven which has been so extensively diffused, shall be purged out of both the churches and the nations.... Every usurper of the rights and prerogatives of Sion's King, shall be pushed from its seat. Every rival kingdom shall be overthrown. The civil and ecclesiastical constitutions of the Earth, shall be regulated by the infallible standard of God's Word. Their office-bearers of every kind shall acknowledge the authority of Messiah the Prince. And the greatest kings on Earth, shall cast their crowns at His feet....

"By spiritual conversion or judicial destruction, He shall effect the entire subjugation of the globe. And, at the last, there shall not be a spot on the face of the habitable Earth where the True Church of Christ shall not have effected a footing – nor a single tribe of the vast family of man which shall not have felt the meliorating and blissful influence of Christian laws and institutions."⁸¹¹

"It is the duty of nations, as the subjects of Christ, to take His Law as their rule."⁸¹² "We contend, then, that the Bible is to be our rule not only in matters of a purely religious nature in matters connected with conscience and the worship of God -- but [also] in matters of a civil or political nature."⁸¹³

"The people of Israel were instructed to regulate their national concerns by a revealed standard, and were taught to regard the possession of God's revealed statutes and judgments as a national distinction for which they were bound to be grateful. Nor is there anything said, which would warrant us to conclude that this was to be regarded as peculiar to that people.... The Chief Magistrate was to have a copy of the Law, according to which he should act in the discharge of his official duties."⁸¹⁴

"Nations and their rulers are encouraged to obey the Law of God by the promise of suitable rewards; are cautioned against disobedience by appropriate threats.... The Jews, at least, were bound to regulate their national concerns by the revealed will of Jehovah.... Nations like them in possession of revealed truth, are still bound to take it as their supreme rule, standard, and guide in all their civil affairs. Neither do we wait to inquire what parts of the Judicial Law given to the Jews are binding upon Christian States. We build at present upon the broad and undeniable fact that nations as such and civil magistrates in their official capacity, when the matter of revelation was less extensive than it is now, were bound to make it their rule of duty. And from this, we deduce the natural and reasonable inference that civil communities blessed by God with the perfect revelation of His will are under obligation at all times to shape and model their political conduct by the dictates of this infallible standard.... They must be held bound to do the same at all times. What is moral is neither of local nor of temporary obligation. If nations are not bound by the Word of God, they are not responsible or punishable for acting contrary to it."⁸¹⁵

"Nations as such are under the obligation of the Moral Law. They are bound to regulate their affairs by the principles and precepts of the Decalogue. Every precept of that Law, they are bound to obey.... And if nations are thus capable of obeying the whole Moral Law – who will contend that they are not under obligation so to do?"

“Nations as such are bound to recognize the obligation of the Word of God as a whole; to make it their rule in all their transactions, and their standard of appeal in all circumstances; and in this way to shew their dutiful subjection to that divine Mediator Who is at once the Author or revelation and the Governor among the nations.”⁸¹⁶

– WILLIAM SYMINGTON, Scottish Minister of Glasgow (A.D. 1884)

383) “One of the chief points in the teaching of Jesus about the Kingdom of God, is its continuity as a living principle from its beginning inwardly and secretly without observation till its complete development and perfection in openly manifested glory.” The New Testament “describes a gradual progress of the cause of Christ onwards to universal and complete triumph in the end, as in Christ’s parables of the mustard seed and the leaven.”⁸¹⁷

– JAMES CANDLISH, Distinguished Scottish Theologian (A.D. 1884)

384) “The conversion of the Gentiles ensues by successive stages. But when their totality shall be converted, then the conversion of the Jews in their totality will also ensue.... All this, therefore, before the Parousia [alias the Second Coming] – not by means of it.”⁸¹⁸

– HEINRICH AUGUST WILHELM MEYER, Professor in Hannover (A.D. 1884)

385) “The doctrine which the Church very early derived from the Scriptures respecting Christ’s second coming, is found in the statement of the *Apostles’ Creed*: ‘The third day Christ rose from the dead; He ascended into Heaven; and sitteth [or reigneth and ruleth] at the right hand of God the Father Almighty; from thence He shall come to judge [or vindicate] the quick and the dead.’ According to this statement, there is no corporeal advent of Christ upon Earth after His resurrection until He leaves His session with the Father and comes directly ‘from thence’ to the last judgment. The doctrinal statement in the Apostles’ Creed consequently precludes a premillennial advent of Christ.”⁸¹⁹

“There are no traces of [premillennialistic] Chiliasm in the writings of Clement of Rome, Ignatius, Polycarp, Tatian, Athenagoras, and Theophilus of Antioch. The inference from these facts, then, is that this tenet was not the received faith of the Church certainly down to the year 150 (A.D.)....

“The period between the years 150 and 250, is the blooming age of [Mid-Patristic

Pre]Millenarianism. And yet even in this period, it does not become the [universal or] catholic Faith....

“The [Pre]Millenarian [yet still not pretribulationistic] tendency became stronger as the Church began, in the last half of the second century, to feel the persecuting hand of the [political] government laid upon it. The distressed condition of the people of God, led them to desire and pray for an advent of the Head of the Church that would extinguish all His enemies. It was natural that the doctrine of the [premillennial] personal reign of Christ should be the most prevalent, when the earthly condition of the Church was the most intolerable.”⁸²⁰

“The pressure of persecution being lifted off [(with Constantine’s nominal Christianization of the State) at the beginning of the fourth century A.D.], the Church returned to its earlier and first exegesis of the Scripture data concerning the end of the World and the second coming of Christ. The representations of Revelation twenty, were **once more** interpreted by those in Matthew twenty-five which speak only of an advent at the day of judgment -- and by the instructions given by St. Paul in Second Thessalonians two to correct the erroneous inference which the Thessalonian Church had drawn from his First Epistle to them ‘that the day of Christ is at hand.’ The personal coming of Christ, it was now [once more] held [as previously in the ‘first exegesis’ of the ‘earlier’ and Apostolic Church], is not to take place -- until the final day of doom; until the Gospel has been preached ‘unto the uttermost part of the Earth’ (Acts 1:8); until the Jews have been converted to Christianity after ‘the fullness of the Gentiles be brought in’ (Romans 11).”⁸²¹

“The Scriptures teach that the number of the elect is much greater than that of the non-elect. The Kingdom of the Redeemer in this fallen World, is always described as **far greater and grander than that of Satan.** The operation of grace on Earth, is uniformly represented as mightier than that of sin. ‘Where sin abounded, grace did much more abound.’ And the final number of the redeemed is said to be a ‘number which no man can number’; but that of the lost is not so magnified and emphasized

“The circle of God’s election is a great circle of the Heavens, and not that of a treadmill. The kingdom of Satan is insignificant, in contrast with the Kingdom of Christ. In the immense range of God’s dominion -- **good is the rule, and evil is the exception.** Sin is a speck upon the azure of eternity; a spot upon the sun. Hell is only a corner of the universe.

“The people of God...have in the purposes, promises, truth and power of God -- an infallible certainty of success.... They ought to toil with a hundredfold more energy, and a hundredfold more courage! We propose it as **certain that evangelistic labour will succeed....**

“Tendencies (to unsound doctrine) are destined to disappear.... Blind guides shall cease to lead the blind, and honest self-knowledge will take the place of self-flattery and religious delusion.

“That this will happen, is as certain as that the Holy Spirit has not forsaken the World for which God incarnate died – but will, in His Own way, again search and illumine the human soul in ‘the times of refreshing from the presence of the Lord.’ [Acts 3:19].”⁸²²

– **WILLIAM SHEDD**, American Theology Profess in New York (A.D. 1888)

386) “Into one sheaf we gather all the scepters of the Caesars and the Alexanders and the Czars and the Sultans, of all royalties and dominions, and then we bring the sheaf of scepters and put it down at the feet of Jesus and say: ‘Thou art King of kings, and these Thou hast conquered!’.... The whole Earth is yet to become the temple of His praise. Grass and flowers [are] the tessellated floor of that temple; mountains [are] the pillars, tapestried with morning mist; the ocean [is] the baptismal font; illimitable forests [are] the wind-swept organ-pipes. And the vast heavens [are] the dome into which shall roll, as Atlantic surges beat the beach – the doxology of ransomed hemispheres.”⁸²³

– **T. DEWITT TALMAGE**, Minister of Brooklyn Tabernacle, New York (A.D. 1889)

387) “The Church is to conquer the World. How is she to do it? The answer is not far to seek. By preaching the Gospel to every creature.... Christ in His Own way is bringing the World into subjection to Himself. And the evolution of His great plans, is called providence.”⁸²⁴

– **ROBERT KERR**, American Minister in Richmond Virginia (A.D. 1890)

388) “The great future event to which the signs of the times are believed to point, is the beginning of the Millennium – a period to be characterized [at its commencement] by certain distinctive features, such as...the Holy Spirit upon the nations; the restoration of the Jews...to Christianity and incorporation into the Christian Church as the true and full development of their own Ancient Church; the overthrow of Mohammedanism and its elimination from the World; the downfall and utter destruction and passing away of the Papal Apostasy; the obliteration of Paganism with all its hydra-headed idolatry; the banishment from the World of all false forms of Christianity and all manifestation of infidelity in its protean shapes; the suppression of all that can be called Antichrist, either organized or personal; and the universal reign of Christ with the subjection of all kings, organizations and nations to Him.”⁸²⁵

– **JOHN LAFAYETTE GIRARDEAU**, Professor at Columbia Seminar (A.D. 1890)

389) “The New Testament...reaffirms and emphasizes the moral obligations laid down in the Ten Commandments.... The Christian religion is part of the Common Law of England....

“It was brought to this country [the U.S.A.] by the Colonists.... This religious element or principle was incorporated in the various State Constitutions, and in the *Ordinance of 1787 for the Government of the Northwest Territory* – by virtue of which *Ordinance* it became **the fundamental law** of the [then] Territory of Wisconsin.”⁸²⁶

– **JUDGE LYON**, in the State of Wisconsin’s famous *Edgerton* case (A.D. 1890)

390) “Our laws and our institutions must necessarily be based upon and embody the teachings of the Redeemer of mankind. It is impossible that it should be otherwise.... Our civilization and our institutions are **emphatically** Christian.... This is a religious people.... From the discovery of this Continent to the present hour these and many other matters which might be noticed, add a volume of unofficial declarations to the mass of organic utterances that this is a **Christian** nation.”⁸²⁷

– **JOSIAH BREWER**, U.S. Supreme Court Justice in the famous *Trinity case* (A.D. 1892)

391) “The history of the Church is the rise and **progress** of the Kingdom of Heaven upon **Earth** – for the glory of God and the salvation of the **World**.... Its proper starting-point is the incarnation of the Eternal Word Who dwelt among us and revealed His glory – the glory as of the only-begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth. And next to this, the miracle of the first Pentecost when the Church took her place as a Christian institution filled with the Spirit of the glorified Redeemer and entrusted with the **conversion** of the **nations**.”⁸²⁸